Spanish Grammar Self-Caught

BY

ANDRÉS J. R. V. GARCÍA,

Examiner for the Chartered Institute of Secretaries,
Principal of the Garcia School of Languages,
Author of the "Dictionary of Engineering
Terms," the "Dictionary of Kulway
Terms," in Spanish-En lish
and English-Spanish,
&c., &c., &c.



SECOND EDITION.
REVISED.

"Key to Spanish Grammar Self-Taught" published separately.

Companion Volume: -- "SPANISH SELF-TAUGHT."

LONDON:

E. MARLBOROUGH & Co., 51, OLD BAILEY, E.C. 4.

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED.]

spanish Grammar Seit-Caught



SECOND FOLION

repeated to party transport the comment of the comment of

TO DE PARTIE AND TO ACCUSE ENTRY BUTTON BOTTON

PREFACE.

MY principal object in this Grammar is to present, as clearly as possible, the rules that are necessary to enable the student to read, write and speak the Spanish language grammatically; I have therefore omitted everything that could in any way confuse or retard the progress of those who desire to gain a practical knowledge in as short a time as possible.

The exercises should be written out carefully and then compared with the Key. After making necessary corrections the exercise should be re-written, in order to impress the memory with the correct formation of the sentences. If this be done attentively, rapid progress will be made.

As the student proceeds with the study of this Grammar he should refer to *Spanish Self-Taught*,* where he will find most useful and comprehensive vocabularies and conversations, with the English phonetic pronunciation of the Spanish words. This will greatly accelerate his progress in the acquisition of the language.

ANDRÉS J. R. V. GARCÍA.

London, 1917.

^{*} Spanish Self-Taught. Classified Vocabularies and Conversations, with phonetic pronunciation. Enlarged edition. Revised by Andrés J. R. V. García. Crn. 8vo., in cloth, 3/- net; in wrapper, 1/9 net.

CONTENTS.

	The state of the s	AGE
INTRODUC	TION: The Alphabet and Pronunciation	7
The A	accent; the Tilde; the Hyphen	IO
Diære	sis; Punctuation; Tonic Accent; Capitals	II
LESSON	s same same na blassa septe satisfection in its	
new I.	The Articles	13
hes ville resessor	Gender of Substantives	13
	with Verbs; no possessive case	14
III.	The Definite Article before the Substantive; Translation of you and thou	15
IV.	Translation of but: pero, sino, and mas	17
	Ser and estar	18
	Adjectives	19
	Declension	20
VII.	Adjectives: Demonstrative and Interrogative	23
VIII.	Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns	24
IX.	Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns	26
X.	Cardinal Numbers	27
XI.	Ordinal Numbers	30
XII.	Fractions	32 33 34

LESSON	Personal Pronouns	36
20111.	Reflective Personal Pronouns	37
XIV.	Demonstrative Pronouns	38
XV.	Relative and Indefinite Pronouns	
	Interrogatives	43
XVII.	The Verbs: The Auxiliary Haber The Auxiliary Verb Tener Formation of Compound Tenses with Haber	45 48 49
XIX.	The Auxiliary Verb Ser	57
	The Auxiliary Verb Estar The use of Ser and Estar	53 55
XXI.	The Regular Verbs; First Conjugation: **Hablar****************	56
	The Second Conjugation: Aprender Reflexive Verbs	59 61
XXIII.	Third Conjugation: Vivir	63 64
	Sequence of Tenses	65
XXIV.	Irregular Verbs Seven Classes of slightly irregular Verbs;	67
	First Class: Acertan	68
	Second Class: Almorzar	69 70
XXV.	Fourth Class: Entender)	72
	Fifth Class: Sentir Sixth Class: Pedir	74
X1	Seventh Class: Traducir	75
XXVI.	Verbs almost entirely irregular: Andar	77
	Dar and ir	79 80
XXVII.	Irregular Verbs, continued: Poder and	
	decir	83 84
	Jugar and dormir	85
XXVIII.	Irregular Verbs, continued: Poner and oir	89
	Traer and salir	90

LESSON XXIX.	Irregular verbs, continued: Valer and
₹E	veniv 93
XXX.	The Participle
	Adverbs: Of Place
XXXII.	Prepositions; translation of for and by Use of para and por exemplified 105
XXXIII.	Conjunctions: Connective or Copulative 108 Disjunctive and Adversative 109 Conditional and Causal 110 Continuative, Comparative, Illative 111
XXXIV.	Interjections
XXXV.	Construction
laries 1. Vent	ajas de la atención e inconvenientes de su
	ARY, alphabetical, of words occurring in the ish Exercises for translation into Spanish 125-144
"To th	ne Student"

SPANISH GRAMMAR SELF-TAUGHT

INTRODUCTION.

I. **The Alphabet.*** The Spanish alphabet contains twenty-eight letters (without including the rr and the w). The letters are divided into vowels and consonants.

The vowels are: a, e, i, o, u, and sometimes y; the rest are consonants.

Ch, ll, and rr are single letters although double in form.

The Alphabet is as follows:-

Characters. Name and Pronunciation.

A, a — (ah) when accented or long, like a in father, as in alma (ahl'mah),* casa (kah'sah).*

When unaccented or short it has a sound similar to the above but shorter; e.g. the second a in alma (ahl'mah) and casa (kah'sah).

- B, b (beh) is hard like an English b before l and r, and after m and n; e.g. blondo (blohn'doh), sombra (sohm'brah). In other cases softer, as escribir (ess-kree-beer'), barba (bahrr'bah).
- C, c— (theh) like k before a, o, u, or a consonant, as casa (kah'sah), col (kohl), cura (koo'rah), clima (klee'mah), criado (kree-ah'doh).

Like th (as in thing—not as in they) before e and i, as doce (doh'theh), paciencia (pahthee-en'thee-ah).†

Ch, ch - (tcheh) is always like the ch in church, as cháchara (chah'chahrah), macho (mah'cho).

^{*} The phonetic spelling of the Spanish words is that used throughout Spanish Self-Taught.

 $[\]dagger$ In the South of Spain and in South America c is pronounced as in English. In the eighteen Spanish American nations c is called "seh" and z "sehtah."

Characters.

Name and Pronunciation.

D, d — (deh) as in English, but slightly softer, after l, n, s, r, as espalda (espahl'dah), amando (ahmahn'-doh), esdrújulo (essdroo'hoolo).

In other cases somewhat like an open th.

- Final d sounds something like th in they, or, more usually, is silent, as usted (oosteh'), verdad (vehrdah'). The Spanish Academy condemns the slight th sound given to final d.
- E, e—(eh) when accented or long, like a in air; e.g. leche (leh'cheh), correo (cohrreh'o).

 When unaccented or short, like e in tell; e.g. mentira

(mentee'rah), padre (pah'dreh).

- F, f (effeh) as in English.
- G, g (gheh) before consonants and the vowels a, o, u, is hard like the g in give, as gato (gah'toh). [When followed by n, the two letters are separately pronounced, as digno (deeg'no).]

Before e and i, it is soft like ch in the Scotch word loch, as genio (heh'neeo).

- H, h (ah'cheh) is never sounded except at the beginning of words and followed by ue—the English w or wh—when it has a very soft and slightly nasal sound, as in hueso (wheh'so). It is practically silent.
- I, i (ee) when accented or long, like ee in meet, as vino (vee'no).

When unaccented or short like *i* in *mill*, *bid*; e.g. *media* (meh'deeah), *minutos* (minoo'tohss).

- N.B.—The Spanish *i* never has the sound of *i* in the English word *mile*.
- J, j (ho'tah) before e and i a guttural, like the ch in the Scotch word loch, as paja (pah'hah', jamás (hahmahss'). It is pronounced softly.
- K, k (kah) as in English.
- L, 1 (elleh) as in English.
- Ll, ll—(el-yeh) like lli in billiards, as llegar (l'yehgahr'), gallina (gahl-yee'nah).
- [Ll and rr are considered single letters, and cannot be divided.]

Characters.

Name and Pronunciation.

M,m — (emmeh) as in English.

N, n — (enneh) as in English.

- \tilde{N} , \tilde{n} (en-yeh)—n with accent tilde—like ny in Bunyan, as sue \tilde{n} 0 (swehn'yo), a \tilde{n} 0 (ahn'yo).
- O, o—(oh) when accented or long, as in English go; e.g. roca (ro'kah).
 - When unaccented or short, it has the same sound cut short, like o in tomato; e.g. lago (lah'go), viento (vee-en'toh).
- P, p (peh) as in English.
- Q, q—(koo), followed by u, is only used before e and i, and sounds like k:—aquel (ah-kel'), quedar (keh-dahr'). [Where u is pronounced, namely before a and o, the q has been changed into c, as cuando (kwahn'doh).]
- R, r—(erreh) is sharply pronounced with the tip of the tongue, and sounds like the r in rough, (1) at the beginning of words, as rastro (rah'stro); (2) after l and n, as malrotar (mahl-ro-tahr'); honra (ohn'rah); it should always be sounded.

Double r(rr) is very sharply vibrated.

- S, s—(esseh) always sharp like the s in sole, never as in lose; e.g. Dios (dee'ohss), rosa (ro'sah—not ro'zah).
- T, t (teh) like t in tart; never as in creature, nation; e.g. criatura (cree-ah-too'rah), patio (pah'tee-o).
- U, u—(oo) when accented or long, like oo in food, e.g. una (oo'nah), burro (boor'ro).
 - When unaccented or short, like oo in book; e.g. carbúnculo (cahr-boon'coolo).
- It is not pronounced if preceded by q or g and followed by e or i, as qué (keh), guerrero (gehrreh'ro); unless marked by the crema or diæresis ("), as vergüenza (vehr-goo-ehn'thah). When used in a diphthong it is pronounced as w, e.g. agua (ah'gwah), hueso (wheh'so).
- V, v (veh) as in English.

Characters. Name and Pronunciation.

X, x — (ehkeess) between two vowels, and in the prefix ex, is pronounced as in English (ks).

In words which formerly had this sound, j or g has now been substituted for x, as xefe, now jefe; baxeza, now bajeza; México—Méjico.

Y, y — (ee-gree-eh'gah) when standing alone, like e in the

English word me, but shorter.

Y before a vowel in the same syllable, or between two vowels, sounds like English y, though somewhat stronger, as ayuno (ah-yoo'no), yugo (yoo'go).

Z, z—(theh'tah) like the English th in thought, as zorra (thohr'rah), zumo (thoo'mo).

The Diphthongs are:—ai (ay), au; ei (ey), eu; ia, ie, io, iu; oi, ou; ua, ue, ui (uy), uo.

The Triphthongs are: -iai, iei, uai (uay), uei (uey).

- II. **Accent.**—There is only one written accent, the acute ('), and it is used:
 - (a) To distinguish a number of short words from one another, as dá, give, from da, gives; also to distinguish the 1st person plural of the past tense, 1st and 3rd conjugations of verbs, from the present, as cantámos, we sang, from cantamos, we sing.
 - (b) Over various particles (como, cuando, donde) and pronouns (cual, cuanto, que, quien, este, aquel) when intended to be emphatic in exclamations and questions; e.g. i Cómo llueve! How it rains! Era aquélla una nueva generación. That was a new generation.
 - (c) To mark the syllable bearing the *Tonic Accent* (which see below).
- III. **The Tilde.**—This sign $(\tilde{\ })$ is placed over n to form another letter, \tilde{n} , which is called "en-yeh"; thus the word $ca\tilde{n}on$ (cannon) is pronounced "can-yon."
- IV. **The Hyphen** (el guion) is employed as in English, i.e. for compound words and to divide a syllable at the end of a line. The letters ch, ll, and rr, must not be divided in writing, as they are considered single letters.

- V. **The Diæresis** (la dieresis or crema, ").—This sign is placed over the u in the syllables, güe, güi, to indicate that it is to be separately pronounced; for example, ungüénto (ungu-ento), argüir (argu-ir).
- VI. **Punctuation.**—The punctuation marks are the same as those used in English, with the addition of the inverted signs of interrogation and exclamation at the commencement of interrogatory and exclamatory sentences: ¿Qué ha hecho usted en tantos dias? ¡Qué magnifico!
- VII. **The Tonic Accent** (el acento prosódico) is the special stress p'aced upon a syllable when pronouncing a word. In Spanish as in English one syllable carries the principal stress. It is very necessary to obtain a correct accentuation in order to speak the language properly.

The easiest rules are the following:-

- 1. Words terminating in unaccented vowels or in n or s have the stre s on the last syllable but one.
- 2. Unaccented words terminating in consonants other than n or s have the stress on the last syllable.
- 3. Diphthongs,—ia, ie, io, ua, uo, &c.,—are treated as single vowels.

When the stress falls otherwise than as above it is indicated by the acute accent: compare público, public; publico, I publish; publicó, he published.

VIII. Capital Letters.—Proper nouns commence with capitals, but proper adjectives, even when used as nouns, do not; for example, Un español ha venido de España (a Spaniard has come from Spain). En Inglaterra hay muchos escoceses (in England there are many Scotchmen).

In all other cases the capital letters are employed as in English.

The months and days of the week may be written with small initials, although many now commence these words with a capital as in English.

LESSON I.

The Definite Article (el articulo determinado).

The article el, the, is used to determine a noun masculine · singular, as el hombre, the man. The article la is the feminine: la mujer, the woman.

When the article el comes after the preposition, a, to, or de, of or from, the e is dropped and the two words become one, thus al, del, instead of a el, de el. But when the el is a pronoun it retains the e, as a él, to him.

In Spanish there is also a neuter article, lo, employed to represent a general abstract idea; lo bonito, all that is pretty, lo suyo, all that is his, lo mio, all that is mine.

The Indefinite Article (el articulo indeterminado).

The indefinite article is as follows:

SINGULAR. un, a or an, before a masculine noun. una, a or an, before a feminine noun.

unos, some, before a masculine noun. PLURAL. unas, some, before a feminine noun.

Ex. Un hombre (uno drops the o before a noun), a man unos hombres, some men una mujer, a woman unas mujeres, some women.

The following words should be learned, as they will occur in the exercises*:-

VOCABULARY.

MASCULINE.

The father, el padre the man, el hombre the king, el rev the year, el año the minute, el minuto the month, el mes the clock, or watch, el reloj

the mother, la madre the woman, la mujer the queen, la reina the hour, la hora the week, la semana the city, la ciudad the ink, la tinta

^{*} See "Gender of Substantives," p. 13, third paragraph.

VOCABULARY, continued:-

the paper, el papel the day, el dia the pencil, el lápiz the room, el cuarto the church, la iglesia the pen, la pluma the house, la casa the street, la calle

And = y, but before i or hi e is used for euphony; example: Algodón e hilo, cotton and thread. España e Inglaterra, Spain and England.

EXERCISE I.

[The exercise should be translated carefully into Spanish, and then compared with the Key, all mistakes being noted and the exercise written over again correctly. The student should never refer to the Key *before* writing the exercise.]

I. The father and mother.* 2. The paper and pencil. 3. The day and the hour. 4. The day, month and year. 5. The men and women. 6. Some minutes. 7. Some pens and pencils. 8. A church and a house. 9. Some houses and the church. 10 The street and the house. 11. The pen, ink and paper. 12. The day, hour and minute. 13. The king and the queen. 14. Some days and some hours. 15. The street, the house and the room.

LESSON II.

Gender of Substantives.

The following belong to the masculine gender:—The names of males, days, months, cardinal points, etc., also of trees, metals, colours, decimal weights and measures.

The following belong to the **feminine gender:**—Names of females, of countries ending in *a*, and abstract nouns.

[These rules are subject to exceptions, and therefore the the best way to master the gender of Spanish nouns is to learn them with the article attached, but see also next paragraph but one].

Substantives ending in a, d, ion, or umbre are usually feminine, and those ending in the other letters are masculine. Nouns ending in ama are masculine. There is only

^{*} There is no fixed rule for the use or omission of the article before each noun. Where nouns of different gender are coupled together it is better to repeat the article, otherwise the Spanish may follow the English.

one common noun ending in o which is feminine—mano, hand; la mano, the hand; una mano, a hand.

In order to avoid the disagreeable sound caused by the meeting of two a's all singular feminine substantives beginning with an **accented** a or ha take the masculine article el instead of the feminine la; for example, el a ma, the soul; el agua, the water; el alba, the dawn of day: el hambre, the hunger. But this does not apply to the plural: las almas, las aguas, &c.

Plural of Substantives & Adjectives.

The plural of substantives and adjectives is formed by adding s to the singular. Example: el caballo, the horse, los caballos, the horses; grande, large, grandes casas, large houses.

The preposition **de**, of or from, combines with the masculine article el, thus: del hombre (not de el), of the man. In the plural no contraction is made: de los hombres, of the men.

The preposition **a** and the masculine article *el* are combined thus: *al hombre*, to the man. This does not apply to the plural, *a los hombres*; neither does it apply to the teminine, *a la mujer*, to the woman.

It should be specially noted that we say in Spanish:

To love (to) a person, amar a una persona; To see (to) a friend, ver a un amigo;

but when **things** are mentioned, and **not** persons, the preposition α is dropped:

To see a garden, ver un jardin; To see a palace, ver un palacio.

Note.—After the verb *tener*, to have, the preposition *a* is never used: *Tengo un hermano*. I have a brother.

There is **no possessive case** in Spanish. Instead of saying the man's house we say the house of the man, la casa del hombre.

Some masculine nouns ending in o which stand for persons form the feminine by changing the o into a.

VOCABULARY.

MASCULINE.

The grandfather, el abuelo the brother, el hermano the son, el hijo the boy, el muchacho the little boy, el niño the uncle, el tio the nephew, el sobrino the cousin, el primo the brother-in-law, el cuñado the father-in-law, el suegro the stepson, el hijastro thestepbrother, el medio hermano

FEMININE.

the grandmother, la abuela
the sister, la hermana
the daughter, la hija
the girl, la muchacha
the little girl, la niña
the aunt, la tia
the niece, la sobrina
the cousin (fem)., la prima
the sister-in-law, la cuñada
the mother-in-law, la suegra
the step-daughter, la hijastra
the step-sister, la media hermana

EXERCISE II.

Translate into Spanish: -

1. The nephew of the King. 2. The Queen's niece. 3. To the man. 4. To the child's room. 5. At the station. 6. The boys' books. 7. The days of the week. 8. His grandfather's house. 9. The grandmother's clock. 10. The child's pencil. 11. The nephew and the niece. 12. The months of the year. 13. From the hotel to the station. 14. Of the gardens of the town. 15. To the page of the book. 16. The children's mother. 17. The uncle, the aunt, and the little girl. 18. The brother-in-law and his uncle. 19. The niece and the girl. 20. His father and mother.

LESSON III.

Translation of "you" and "thou."

[The verb tener, to have, page 48, should be learned.

An alphabetical vocabulary will be found at the end of the book. The student is recommended to learn a certain number of words thoroughly every day.]

Names of materials and abstract substantives, when employed in a general sense, as well as those expressing collectivity, contrary to the English rule, have the definite article: *El oro es un metal*, gold is a metal.

"You" is translated usted, and abbreviated, V. or Vd. for the singular, and VV., Vds., or Vs. for the plural.

Usted means "Your Honour," and the verb is placed in the third person singular or plural as the case may be.

 $T\vec{u}$, thou, the second person singular, is employed in prayer, in conversation between relatives and intimate friends, and in speaking to children; otherwise the second person plural is used instead, as in English.

In a declarative sentence where a statement is made, the subject, whether noun or pronoun, precedes the verb, as

Usted habla. You speak.

In interrogative sentences the verb precedes the subject: ¿Habla él? Does he speak?

VOCABULARY.

A little, un poco Spanish, español English, inglés French, francés Italian, italiano Russian, ruso other, otro first thing, primera cosa; nothing more, nada más bacon, el tocino egg, el huevo bread, el pan butter, la manteca toast, la tostada the language, la lengua, el idioma Madam, Mrs., Señora Miss, Señorita your father, el padre de V. I have (see page 48)

breakfast (early), el desayuno breakfast (late), el almuerzo little, poco difference, la diferencia which, cual tea, el té coffee, el café chocolate, el chocolate fried bananas, bananas fritos milk, la leche sugar, el azúcar; a lump of, un rice, el arroz to speak, hablar I speak, yo hablo he speaks, él habla you speak, Vd. habla we speak, nosotros hablamos they speak, ellos hablan I find, hallo.

EXERCISE III.

Translate into Spanish:-

1. Do you speak Spanish (Speaks Your Honour Spanish)?
2. Yes, Miss, I speak a little Spanish. 3. Does your father speak French (Speaks your father French)? 4. No, Madam, he speaks Spanish. 5. Does your grandmother speak many languages?
6. She speaks Spanish, English, French and Italian. 7. Do you speak Italian, Miss? 8. No, I speak Russian. 9. Have you any change? 10. Yes, how much do you want? 11. Thanks, I find I have enough. 12. Have you had (ha) breakfast? 13. No, I am going to breakfast now. 14. We have the early breakfast and the

late breakfast. 15. What is the difference? 16. The early breakfast (the real breakfast) is the first thing one takes (toma) in the morning. 17. And the other? 18. The other is at about 10 or 11 o'clock. 19. What do you have for breakfast? 20. Which? The early breakfast? 21. I take (tomo) a cup of coffee and nothing else. 22. And for the other? 23. Bacon or rice and eggs, tea, coffee or chocolate, and bread and butter and toast. 24. I have fried bananas and eggs instead of bacon and eggs. 25. Do you take sugar and milk in your tea? 26. Two lumps of sugar and very little milk.

LESSON IV.

Pero, Sino and Mas.

N.B.—The verb haber, to have, p. 45, should be learned. This is an auxiliary verb. The remarks on this verb should be carefully read, and the examples of its use should be learned. See page 47.]

But is translated by pero, sino, and mas (without accent). **Pero** is the usual translation.

No tengo una pluma, pero tengo un lápiz. I have no pen, but I have a pencil.

Sino is employed in a negative sentence when not followed by a verb, and especially when exception is indicated; for example:

No he visto a su tio, sino a su tia. I have not seen your uncle, but your aunt.

Mas is used to denote opposition:

Lo dice, mas no convienen con él los otros. He says so, but the others do not agree with him.

VOCABULARY.

To have, haber officer, el oficial to see, ver book, el libro wine, el vino beer, la cerveza yesterday, ayer table, la mesa to have seen, haber visto.

I have, he; he has, ha nothing, nada many, nuchos letter, la carta to-day, hoy yesterday, ayer theatre, el teatrolast night, anoche friend, el amigo VOCABULARY, continued :-

house, la casa this morning, esta mañana to-morrow, mañana key, la llave last week, la semana pasada paper, el papel newspaper, el periodico daily paper, el diario news, las noticias this week, esta semana.

EXERCISE IV.

Translate into Spanish: -

I. Have you seen the officer? 2. Yes, I saw him in France. 3. Have you wine or beer? 4. Have you seen my book? 5. Yes, I saw it yesterday on the table. 6. Has your brother seen my uncle? 7. He saw him last week. 8. When did you see the house? 9. I saw it this morning. 10. Has your wife seen that shop? 11. Not yet, but she is going to-morrow. 12. Have you seen my keys? 13. No, I have not seen them. 14. When did your father see the doctor? 15. He saw him last night. 16. Have you any news this morning? 17. I have seen the paper, but there is nothing new. 18. Have you received many letters to-day? 19. Not as many as yesterday. 20. Did you go to the theatre last night.? 21. Yes, sir, I went with some friends.

LESSON V.

Ser and Estar.

There are two verbs to be in Spanish.

Ser represents the *permanent* and **estar** the *temporary* state. The verb *ser*, page 51, should be learned. *Ser* is the auxiliary employed in the formation of the passive voice; it is also used to denote possession. Compare the following in order to understand the rule:—

Ese libro es mio, that book is mine; it is my property, therefore the permanent verb is used.

Ese libro está en la mesa, that book is on the table; that is to say, it is temporarily on the table, therefore we use the temporary verb estar.

La madera es dura, the wood is hard. Wood is by nature hard, therefore use ser.

La madera está aquí, the wood is here. The wood is temporarily here, it can be moved, therefore use the verb estar.

The proper employment of the verbs ser and estar constitutes one of the principal difficulties of the Spanish language.

Days of the Week (Dias de la semana):

Sunday,	Domingo	Thursday,	Jueves
Monday,	Lunes	Friday,	Viernes
Tuesday,	Martes	Saturday,	Sábado.
Wednesday.	Miércoles		

Months of the Year (Meses del año):

January,	Enero	July,	Julio
February,	Febrero	August,	Agosto
March,	Marzo	September,	Septiembre
April,	Abril	October,	Octubre
May,	Мауо	November,	Noviembre
June,	Junio	December,	Diciembre.

Seasons of the Year (Las estaciones del año):

Spring,	la primavera	Autumn,	el otoño
Summer,	el verano	Winter,	el invierno.

Gender and Agreement of Adjectives.

Adjectives ending in **o**, **an** or **on**, form the feminine in **a**; also those in **or**, e.g., sucesor, sucesora, except exterior, inferior, peor, mejor and superior, which do not change for the feminine.

Superior as a substantive has the feminine termination a, thus:—la Superiora del convento, the Lady Superior of the convent.

Adjectives of nationality which end in a consonant, add a for the feminine, e.g., español, española.

Those terminating in other letters are common to both genders.

Adjectives agree in gender and number with the substantive. Examples:—Un hermoso jardin, a beautiful garden; unos hermosos jardines, some beautiful gardens; una casa pequeña, a small house; unas casas pequeñas, some small houses.

VOCABULARY.

To return, volver
Belgium, la Bélgica
professor, el profesor
come, venir
once, una vez
twice, dos veces
gentleman, caballero, señor
lawyer, el abogado
rich, rico
actor, el actor
actress, la actriz
door, la puerta
window, la ventana
what is? ¿ qué es?

very, muy
Asia, el Asia
Europe, la Europa
boy, el muchacho
always, siempre
industrious, industrioso
England, la Inglaterra
island, la isla
accountant, el contador
musician, el músico
artist, el (la) artista
shut, cerrado
large, grande
small, pequeño.

EXERCISE V.

1. Are you an officer? 2. Yes, Madam, I have just returned from Belgium. 3. When does the professor come? 4. He comes twice a week. 5. What is that gentleman? 6. He is a lawyer, and his son is a doctor. 7. Is he rich? 8. He is very rich. 9. Asia is larger than Europe. 10. Boys are not always industrious. 11. England is an island, and Cuba is also an island. 12. Is your friend an accountant? 13. No, he is an actor. 14. His uncle is a tailor. 15. Are you a musician? 16. No, madam, I am an artist. 17. Is the door shut? 18. No, the door is open, but the window is shut. 19. Is the window large? 20. No, the window is small, but the door is large.

LESSON VI.

Declension. (La declinación.)

SINGULAR.

MASCULINE.

Nominative - el hombre - the man
Genitive - del hombre - of the man
Dative - al hombre - to the man
Accusative - el hombre - the man.

FEMININE.

			la mujer -			
Genitive -	-	-	de la mujer	-	-	of the woman
Dative -	-11	1	a la mujer	-	-	to the woman
Accusative			la mujer -	-	-	the woman.

NEUTER.

Nominative	-	-	lo bueno -	-	-	the good
Genitive -	-	-	de lo bueno	-	-	of the good
Dative -	-		a lo bueno	-	-	to the good
Accusative	-0		lo bueno -	-	-	the good.

PLURAL.

MASCULINE.

Nominative	-	-	los hombres -	-	the men
Genitive -	-0	-	de los hombres	1-40	of the men
Dative -	-	-	a los hombres	-	to the men
Accusative	-	1	los hombres -	-	the men.

FEMININE.

Nominative	-	-	las mujeres -	-	the women
			de las mujeres		
			a las mujeres		
Accusative	-	-	las mujeres -	-	the women.

[There is no neuter plural.]

The declension of the feminine with the masculine article is very simple; for instance, el ave, the bird, del ave, al ave, el or al ave. This is to avoid the clashing of the two a's, as la ave is not euphonious.* In the plural the feminine article is used because the s, coming between the a's, avoids the clashing of vowel sounds; e.g. las aves, de las aves, a las aves, las aves or a las aves.

The declension with the indefinite article is so simple that it is hardly worth while setting it down in full; suffice it to say that it runs as follows: un hombre, de un hombre, &c., and the feminine: una mujer, de una mujer, &c.

^{*} See Lesson II., Gender of Substantives, last paragraph (p. 14).

VOCABULARY.

Lady, señora beautiful, hermoso give, dar song, la canción to sing, cantar well. bien to know, saber I know, yo se before, antes to buy, comprar I buy, compro cost, costar to pay, pagar you paid, Vd. pagó delightful, muy agradable to visit, visitar visit, la visita Spanish-speaking countries, paises en que se habla español to go, ir

how, cómo why, por qué because, porque to read, leer read (p.p.), leido to like, gustar. jewel, la joya to prefer, preferir lace, el encaje fine, beautiful, hermoso, fino valuable, de valor last year, el año pasado to spend, pass (time), pasar nice time, buen tiempo to think, pensar thinking, pensando not yet, no aun, no todavia to have just returned, acabar de llegar I am going, voy.

EXERCISE VI.

I. That lady has a beautiful voice. 2. Give her that song, she sings it very well. 3. Yes, I know, she sang it before you came in.

4. Is that your book? 5. Yes, I bought it this morning. 6. Did it cost much? 7. Not as much as you paid for yours. 8. How is that? 9. Because I bought it from a man who had read it.

10. Does your sister like jewels? 11. No, she prefers lace. 12. Can one buy fine lace in Spain? 13. Yes, Spanish lace is very valuable.

14. Were you in Spain last year? 15. Yes, miss, I spent three months in Seville and two months in Madrid. 16. Did you enjoy yourself much? 17. It was delightful, and I am thinking of going again next year. 18. Have you visited any of the Spanish-speaking countries in America? 19. Not yet, but I hope to, some day.

20. I have just returned from the Argentine, and next year I am going to Peru.

LESSON VII.

The Adjective. (El adjetivo.)

The demonstrative adjectives are:

SINGULAR.

FEM.	NEUTER.	
esta	esto	this
esa	eso	that
aquella	aquello	that yonder.
	esta esa	esta esto esa eso

PLURAL.

estos	estas	[None]	these
	esas	"	those
aquellos.	aquellas	,,	those yonder.

Este, esta, esto, refers to something near the speaker.

Ese, esa, eso, refers to something near the person spoken to.

Aquel, aquella, aquello, refers to something remote from both.

The interrogative adjectives are:

¿Qué? what? ¿Cuál? cuáles? what? which? ¿Cuánto? cuánta? } how much? how many?

Qué is also used in exclamatory phrases, thus:

¡Qué hombre! What a man!

If the substantive be followed by an adjective, the adverb tan is placed before the adjective, thus:

¡Qué vapor tan grande! What a large steamer!

VOCABULARY.

Yours, de Vd. this one, este that one, este pretty, bonito, lindo best, el mejor, la mejor too much, demasiado how many, cuantos to sell, vender new, nuevo farther on, más alla river, el rio

runs, corre
to live, vivir
country, el campo
town, laciudad
silver, la plata
gold, el oro
to receive, recibir
both, ambos, ambas
horse, el caballo
to write, escribir
exercise, el ejercicio, tema,

EXERCISE VII.

1. Which of these two books is yours? 2. This one, and that one is yours. 3. What a pretty house! 4. Yes, it is the best in the city. 5. Are you going to buy this house? 6. No, they ask too much for it. 7. How many houses have you? 8. I have two, and want to sell one. 9. This house is new, that one is also new, but that one further on is old. 10. Is this river very long? 11. Yes, it runs through many countries. 12. Do you live in the country? 13. No, Madam, I live in town. 14. Where does your brother live? 15. He lives in Madrid. 16. Is that a silver watch? 17. No, Miss, it is a gold watch. 18. Do you speak Spanish or English? 19. I speak both languages. 20. Does your father buy many horses? 21. No, he only buys two. 22. When do you write your exercises? 23. Every morning before breakfast. 24. I write mine in the evening.

LESSON VIII.

Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns.

(Adjetivos y Pronombres posesivos.)

In Spanish these agree in gender and number with the name of the possessed object and not with that of the possessor.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

SINGULAR.

mi familia, my family
tu hermano, thy brother
su tio, your, his, or her
uncle

la casa y su techo, the house and its roof nuestro padre, our father

nuestra madre, our mother vuestro, vuestra, thy (familiar singular) su casa de Vd., your house (polite singular) PLURAL.

mis primos, my cousins tus hermanas, thy sisters sus parientes, your, his, or her relations

la casa y sus cuartos, the house and its rooms

nuestros vecinos, our neighbours [sisters nuestras hermanas, our vuestros, vuestras, thy (fam. plur.)

sus paises, their countries (pol. plur.)

Mi, tu, and su have no special form for the feminine.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.

(el) mio, (la) mia, mine tuyo, tuya, thine [its suyo, suya, yours, his, hers, nuestro, nuestra, ours vuestro, vuestra, thine suyo, suya, yours, theirs PLURAL.

(los) mios, (las) mias, mine tuyos, tuyas, thine [its suyos, suyas, yours, his, hers, nuestros, nuestras, ours vuestros, vuestras, thine suyos, suyas, yours, theirs.

Examples:

Es culpa de Vd. y no mia. It is your fault and not mine. Muy Señor mio: Dear Sir.
Este libro es mio. This book is mine.
El mio esta en la mesa. Mine (e.g., my book) is on the table.

VOCABULARY.

Pen, la pluma last night, anoche people, la gente full, lleno piece, la pieza to be worth, valer brilliant, brillante box (in theatre), el palco stall, la butaca cheap, barato Isitworth seeing? ¿Vale ver?

small, pequeño very small, muy pequeño family, la familia season, la estación dry, seco hot, caliente it is hot, hace calor seaside, lado del mar only, sólo, solamente to think, creer, pensar.

EXERCISE VIII.

1. Have you my book? 2. No, sir, I have my brother's book.
3. This is my pen, where is yours? 4. Mine is in the other room.
5. Where were you last night? 6. I was at the theatre with my wife. 7. Were there many people there? 8. Yes, Madam, it was full. 9. Is the performance worth seeing? 10. Yes, it is worth seeing; it is very brilliant. 11. Did you take a box? 12. No, Miss, we had stalls, it is much cheaper to take a stall. 13. Is your house small? 14. Yes, sir, it is very small. 15. Do you like a small house? 16. Yes, for a small family. 17. What season do you like best? 18. I prefer the spring, but I also like the summer, and autumn, and even winter if it is dry. 19. What do you do in summer if it is very hot? 20. I go to the seaside.

21. Did you go last year? 22. Yes, Miss, and it was very agreeable.
23. Were you away long? 24. Only a few weeks. 25. I think
I shall go to Spain this year if it is possible.

LESSON IX.

Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns.

(Adjetivos y Pronombres indefinidos.)

Cada jardin, each garden, or every garden.

Cada uno, each one.

Todo hombre, toda mujer, every man, every woman. Todo also means all, the whole, entire, everything.

Alguno, someone, anyone. Alguien refers to persons only, and is always used in the singular number. When someone or anyone is followed by the preposition of, alguno is used, and not alguien.

Ninguno, not any, relates to persons and things, and is used in the negative as *alguno* is used in the affirmative. Nadie relates to persons only, and is used in the negative in the same way as the pronoun *alguien* in the affirmative.

Cierto, cierta, a certain.

Cualquiera, any, whatever, any whatever, either.

Tal, such.

Otro, otra, another; otra pluma, another pen.

Tanto, tanta, as much.

Mucho, mucha, much, a great deal of.

Mismo, misma, same, self.

The plural is formed by adding s to the singular, except in the case of cualquiera, which forms its plural by adding es to cual—thus, cualesquiera—and tal becomes tales; while for the plural of cada, each, every, unos, unas, any, some, a few, several, would be employed.

VOCABULARY.

Book shop, la libreria next street, la próxima calle pencil, el lápiz partner, el socio Argentine, la Argentina Bucnos Ayres, Buenos Aires

VOCABULARY, continued :-

pen or feather, la pluma ink, la tinta stamp, el sello, la estampilla some (masc. piu.), algunos want, necessita few (masc. plu.), unos pocos Spain, España to freeze, helar freezing, helando to take, llevar this time, esta vez with me, conmigo a great many, muchos concert, el concierto this evening, esta tarde possible, posible at what time, a que hora noon, medio dia pleasant, agradable.

EXERCISE IX.

I. Where is the book shop? 2. In the next street. 3. Have you a pencil? 4. No, Madam, I have no pencil, but I have paper, pen and ink. 5. Have you a stamp? 6. I have some, how many do you want? 7. Only a few. 8. Are you writing to your friends in Spain? 9. I wrote yesterday, now I am writing to my partner in the Argentine. 10. Is he coming this year? 11. No, sir, I am going to Buenos Ayres this month. 12. Are you taking your family? 13. Not this time, but the next time I go. 14. Have you many friends in Buenos Ayres? 15. A great many, and also in Montevideo. 16. Are you going to the concert this evening? 17. If possible I shall go; they say it will be very good. 18. At what time does it end? 19. I do not know, but I suppose at the usual time. 20. I do not like to be out late in this weather. 21. It is not so cold this evening. 22. No, I think it is much better than this morning. 23. This morning it was freezing. 24. Then at noon it was snowing, but now it is pleasant.

LESSON X.

Cardinal Numbers as Substantives and Adjectives.

	Uno, una	9.	nueve	17.	diez y siete
2.	dos	10.	diez	18.	diez y ocho
	tres	11.	once	19.	diez y nueve
	cuatro	12.	doce	20.	veinte [una
	cinco	13.	trece	21.	veinte y uno,
	seis	14.	catorce	22.	veinte y dos
	siete	15.	quince		veinte y tres
8.	ocho	16.	diez y seis	24.	veinte y cuatro

25.	veinte y cinco	102.	ciento y dos	1001. mil	y uno, a
	veinte y seis	103.	ciento y tres	1002. mil	y dos
	veinte v siete	120.	ciento veinte	1101. mil	ciento y
	veinte y ocho		ciento veinte y		
	veinte y nueve	cir	ico	1200. mil	doscien-
	treinta	130.	ciento treinta	tos, as	
31	treinta v uno.	135.	ciento treinta	2000. dos	mil
u	na	V	cinco ta	2500. dos	mil qui-
40.	cuarenta	140.	ciento cuaren-	nientos,	as
41.	cuarenta y uno,	150.	" cincuenta	3000. tres	s mil
50.	cincuenta [a	200.	doscientos, as	4000. cua	tro mil
51.	cincuenta y uno,	255.	doscientos cin-	5000. cin	co mil
60.	sesenta [a	cu	enta y cinco	6000. seis	s mil
61.	sesenta y uno, a	300.	trescientos, as	7000. siet	e mil
70.	setenta	400.	cuatrocientos,	8000. och	o mil
71.	setenta y uno, a	as	· 1000 ·	9000. nue	
80.	ochenta	500.	quinientos, as	10,000. d	
81.	ochenta y uno, a	600.	seiscientos, as	100,000.	cien mil
90.	noventa	700.	setecientos, as	1,000,000	. un
91.	noventa y uno, a	800.	ochocientos, as	millon	*
100). ciento (cien)	900.	novecientos,	10,000,00	0. diez
101	ciento y uno, a	1000	. mil [as	millone	S.

Note.—The numbers from 16 to 19 can be written as follows: dieciseis, diecisiete, dieciocho, diecinueve; also 21, &c., veintuno, a, veintidos, veintitres, &c., and treintiuno, cuarentiuno, &c., and so on up to 100.

Uno and its compounds veinte y uno (or veintiuno), treinta y uno (treintiuno), &c., agree in gender with the substantive or the adjective to which they refer, but drop the o when they come before a masculine substantive, e.g. Un hombre, a man.

Unos is used in the plural to mean some or any.

Ciento drops the final syllable whenever it immediately precedes a substantive or adjective whether masculine or feminine.

Read carefully the following examples on the above rules:

Un sobre, an envelope. Una pluma, a pen. Uno de esos lápices, one of those pencils.

Una tinta nueva, a new ink.
Un tintero viejo, an old inkstand.
Una docena, a dozen.
Un pliego de papel, a sheet of paper.
Uno de los lápices es mio, one of the pencils is mine.
Una de las cartas es mia, one of the letters is mine.
Cien soldados han pasado, a hundred soldiers have passed.

Ciento cincuenta marinos, a hundred and fifty sailors.

Doscientos buques, two hundred ships.

Trescientas casas, three hundred houses.

Quinientos oficiales, five hundred officers.

Quinientas enfermeras, five hundred nurses.

For the **hours of the day** use the Cardinal numbers and the article *la*, *las*. Examples:

La una, one o'clock las dos, two o'clock las tres, three o'clock las cuatro, four o'clock las cinco, five o'clock las seis, six o'clock las siete y cuarto, 7.15 las ocho y media, 8.30 las nuevemenos cuarto, 8.45 las diez menos cinco, 5 to 10 las once y cinco, 11.5 las doce, 12.0 mediodia, mid-day medianoche, midnight.

VOCABULARY.

Watch, el reloj clock, el reloj de pared how, cómo to wind, dar cuerda mainspring, el muelle real fast (adv.), rápido fast (watch), adelantado slow (watch), atrasado slow, despacio mine, el mio to strike (the hour), dar it has just, acaba de to hear, oir watchmaker, el relojero street, la calle partner, el socio this year, este año

next year, el año próximo what time is it? ¿ qué hora es? to go out, salir between, entre to suit, convenir very well, muy bien punctually, puntualmente history, la historia volume, el tomo novel, la novela to write, escribir writing, escribiendo written, escrito to come, venir he may come, podrá venir a few (fem. plu.), unas pocas to stop, parar; stopped, parado.

EXERCISE X.

I. What time is it? 2. I do not know. 3. How is that? 4. My watch has stopped. 5. Did you wind it last night? 6. Yes, I wound it a little too much and broke the main spring. 7. Is yours fast or slow? 8. Mine is ten minutes fast, and vesterday it was fifteen minutes slow. 9. Do you hear the church clock? 10. Yes, it has just struck ten; I shall put my watch at that hour. II. Where is there a good watchmaker? 12. In that street. 13. At what time are you going out? 14. I always go out for a walk early in the morning, about eight o'clock. 15. At what time can I see you to-morrow? 16. Between three and four, but four would suit me best. 17. Very well, I shall be here at four punctually. 18. How many books did you buy yesterday? 19. I bought the history of Spain in two volumes and a few novels. 20. What do you prefer to read? 21. I like to read history, travels and novels. 22. Have you written to your partner? 23. Not yet, but I am going to write to-day. 24. Is he coming to England this year? 25. He may come next year, but I doubt that he can come this year.

LESSON XI.

The Ordinal Numbers. (Los números ordinales.)

Primero	first	décimonono	nineteenth
segundo	second	vigésimo	twentieth
tercero	third	vigésimo prime	ro 21st
cuarto	fourth	vigésimo segun	do 22nd
quinto	fifth	vigésimo tercer	o 23rd
sexto	sixth	vigésimo cuarto	24th
séptimo	seventh	vigésimo quinto	25th
octavo	eighth	vigésimo sexto	26th
noveno, nono	ninth	vigésimo séptin	10 27th
décimo	tenth	vigêsimo octav	28th
undécimo	eleventh	vigésimo nono	29th
duodécimo	twelfth	trigésimo	30th
décimotercio	thirteenth	cuadragésimo	40th
décimocuarto	fourteenth	quincuagésimo	50th
décimoquinto	fifteenth	sexagésimo	60th
décimosexto	sixteenth	septuagésimo	70th
décimoseptimo	seventeenth	octogésimo	80th
décimoctavo	eighteenth	nonagésim o	90th

centésimo	100th	sexcentésimo	600th
ducentésimo	200th	septingentésimo	700th
tricentésimo	300th	octogentésimo	800th
cuadringentésimo	400th	noningentésimo	900th
quingentésimo	500th	milésimo	1000th.

The Ordinal numbers are not so frequently used in Spanish as in English. They are principally employed with the names of sovereigns and popes up to the tenth, after that the cardinal numbers are used. They agree in gender and number with the substantives to which they refer.

The ordinal numbers are also used for books, chapters, lessons, and for a few other things; but even in these cases they are, owing to their great length, usually replaced by the cardinal numbers.

We say Alfonso trece because Alfonso décimotercio is too long, and we write it Alfonso XIII.

In some cases the ordinals may be placed either before or after the substantives; for example:

El primer tomo Bl tomo primero The first volume.

El tomo tercero The third volume.

Primero, tercero, and postrero drop the final letter when they immediately precede a masculine substantive.

VOCABULARY.

This work, esta obra as soon as, tan pronto como hand, la mano interesting, interesante to read, leer reading, leyendo read, (p.p.) leido ever, jamás king, el rey to visit, visitar long, largo journey, el viaje

rather, algo
not now, no ahora
suppose, supongo
the present day, del dia (hoy dia)
to do, to make, hacer
done, made, hecho
seasick, mareado
first few days, primeros pocos
the weather, el tiempo
rough weather, mal tiempo
to expect, esperar
trouble, la molestia

VOCABULARY, continued :-

Custom House, la aduana none, ninguno to take, llevar taking, llevando new, nuevo, a

intend, tener la intención to decide, decidir decided, decidido astronomy, la astronomía subject, el sujeto.

EXERCISE XI.

I. Have you the first volume of this work? 2. No, I only have the third volume. 3. Have you read the second volume? 4. Not yet, I intend to read it as soon as I have time. 5. Is that book you have in your hand interesting? 6. It is the most interesting book I have ever read. 7. Did you see the King of Spain when you visited Seville? 8. No, but I saw him the year before in Madrid. 9. Are you going to Spain this year or next? 10. No, this year I intend to visit the Argentine and Uruguay. 11. It is rather a long journey. 12. No, now it can be done in twenty days. 13. Do you get sea-sick? 14. Only the first few days if the weather is rough. 15. Do you expect to have much trouble in the Custom House? 16. None, you see I am not taking anything new. 17. How long do you intend to stay abroad? 18. I think about six months, or perhaps a year. 19. Has your son returned from Buenos Ayres? 20. No, he has extended his voyage, and has decided to visit Montevideo and several other cities. 21. Have you read the history of Spain? 22. Yes, I have read three histories of Spain. 23. I suppose you like to read history in preference to novels? 24. I find history a very interesting subject. 25. The present day novel does not interest me much, I really prefer astronomy.

LESSON XII.

Fractions, Dimensions, and Collectives.

(Fracciones, dimensiones y colectivos.)

Fractions.—These are expressed by the ordinal numbers from the fourth up to and including the tenth, thus:

El todo, the whole, the total un entero, a whole, i.e. without fraction

medio, a half un tercio, a third un cuarto, a quarter un quinto, a fifth un sexto, a sixth un séptimo, a seventh un octavo, an eighth un noveno, a n'nth un décimo, a tenth.

For more than one, prefix the cardinal numbers; for example: tres cuartos, three-fourths; seis quintos, six-fifths; ocho décimos, eight-tenths.

From one-eleventh, they are formed from the cardinal numbers, the last vowel being dropped and the termination avo added.

Un onzavo, one-eleventh
un dozavo, one-twelfth
un trezavo, one-thirteenth
un catorzavo, one-fourteenth
un quinzavo, one-fifteenth
un diez y seisavo, one-sixteenth
un diez y sieteavo, one-seventeenth
un diez y ochoavo, one-eighteenth
un diez y nueveavo, one-nineteenth
un veintavo, a twentieth
un treintavo, a thirtieth, &c., &c.

In the case of one-hundredth it is un centésimo or un cienavo.

Multiplicatives.

Simple, simple doble or duplo, double or twofold triple, triplo, or triplice, treble, triple, or threefold cuádruplo, quadruple, fourfold

quintuplo, quintuple, fivefold
séxtuplo, sixfold
séptuplo, sevenfold
óctuplo, eightfold
décuplo, tenfold
céntuplo, a hundredfold.

The other multiplicatives are best formed by means of the cardinal number with the word veces (times), thus:

Nueve veces mayor. Cien veces tanto. Nine times greater.

A hundred times as much.

Dimensions.—The following examples will show how to express dimensions:

Esta casa tiene cien pies de largo. This house is a hundred feet long. Esta habitación tiene doce pies de largo por diez de ancho.

This room is twelve feet long by ten feet wide.

Collectives.—The most important collective numerals are:

Un par, a pair, a couple
una decena, a set of ten
una docena, a dozen
media docena, half-a-dozen
una quincena, fifteen pieces, 14 days, a fortnight
una veintena, twenty pieces, a score
una centena, un ciento, un centenar, a hundred, some
hundred
un millar, a thousand; millares, thousands.

Una mano de papel, one quire of paper una resma de papel, one ream of paper un par de guantes, a pair of gloves un par de huevos, a couple of eggs hace una semana, a week ago hoy en ocho, this day week hoy en quince, to-day fortnight todos los días, every day todas las mañanas, tardes, every morning, evening la semana que viene, next week la semana pasada, la t week el martes próximo (or que viene), next Tuesday una vez, dos veces, once, twice.

VOCABULARY.

Ticket, el billete, boleto lottery, la loteria several, varios prize, el premio to win, gain, ganar to lose, perder won, ganado lost, perdido

well, bien brilliante, brilliante to be worth while, valer la pena excitem nt, la excitación to think, pensar fortune, la fortuna anything, cualquiera cosa money, el dinero

VOCABULARY, continued:-

gloves, los guantes drawing (of tickets), sorteo to finish, acabar to play, jugar a whole ticket, un billete entero a part, una parte generally, generalmente to continue, continuar, seguir tired, cansado I no longer buy, ya no compro recent, recientemente to suppose, suponer it was supposed, se suponía

to cause, causar a mistake, un error poverty, pobreza to spend (money), gastar to give hope, dar esperanza demoralising, demoralizante excess, el exceso what did you do, qué hizo Vd. when are, cuándo son fortnight, la quincena every, cada fascination, la facinación.

EXERCISE XII.

I. Did you buy a ticket in the Spanish Lottery? 2. Yes, I have bought several, but I have only won very small prizes. 3. And finally did you win or lose? 4. The result is that I have neither won or lost. 5. Well, it was not very brilliant, was it worth while? 6. Oh, yes, there was the excitement of thinking that I was going to gain a fortune. 7. Did you buy a whole ticket or only a part? 8. I generally bought a tenth of a ticket. 9. Do you continue buying now? 10. No, I am tired of expecting the fortune, so I no longer buy. II. Are there any lotteries in other countries besides Spain? 12. Oh, yes, in a great many, but not in England in recent years, because they are supposed to cause poverty. 13. That is a mistake, because what the people would have spent on lottery tickets they spend on drink, betting or amusements. 14. That does not give much satisfaction, it does not give any hope, whilst a lottery gives hope. 15. Do you think that the lottery is demoralising? 16. Anything carried to excess is bad, but I have never heard of anybody buying lottery tickets to excess. 17. When your ticket won, what did you do with the money? 18. I bought another tenth, and a pair of gloves. 19. When are the drawings? 20. In Spain every fortnight, in some countries they have a drawing every week. 21. When is the next drawing? 22. Next week, I I think it will be next Tuesday or Wednesday. 23. Are you going to buy a ticket this time? 24. No, I have finished playing, and do not intend to buy any more; it no longer has any fascination for me.

LESSON XIII.

The Pronouns. (Los pronombres.)

The pronouns are divided into personal, demonstrative, possessive, relative and indefinite or indeterminate. See pp. 38, 39, 41.

Personal Pronouns (Pronombres personales).

These pronouns generally precede the verb in the indicative mood, and also in the subjunctive, except when the subjunctive is used as an imperative.

They follow the infinitive, the present participle, and the subjunctive used as imperative, in which cases they are appended to the verb, and form one word with it.

FIRST PERSON.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	A CONTRACTOR DESIGNATION	Masculine.	Feminine.	
	Yo, I	nosotros, nos, we	nosotras, nos, we	
Gen.	de mi, of me	de nosotros	de nosotras, of us	
Dat.	a mi, me, to	a nosotros, nos	a nosotras, nos, to	
	me, me		us, us	
Acc.	conmigo, with	con nosotros	con nosotras, with	

SECOND PERSON (familiar form).

us.

Nom. Tu, thou	vosotros	vosotras, os, thou
Gen. de ti, of thee	de vosotros	de vosotras, of you
Dat. a ti, te, to	a vosotros, os	a vosotras, os, to
thee		you, you
Acc. contigo, with	con vosotros	con vosotras, with
thee	agalara aras (Zyalis da a	you.

Os, you or ye, is placed before or after verbs, and used instead of vos.

THIRD PERSON.

Nom. El, he	ellos	ellas, they
Gen. de él, of him	de ellos	de ellas, of them
Dat. a él, le, to	a ellos, les	a ellas, les, las,
him, him		to them, them
Acc. con él, with	con ellos	con ellas, with
him		them.

THIRD PERSON (polite form, used for English 2nd person).

SINGULAR. PLURAL.

Nom. V. or Vd. (usted), you

VV. or Vds. (ustedes), you

Gen. de Vd., of you Dat. a Vd., le, la, to you

de Vds., of you a Vds., les, to you

Acc. le, la, you

los, las, you.

THIRD PERSON, Neuter.

SINGULAR.

Nom. Ello, lo, it

Gen. de ello, of it (There is no plural.)

Dat. a ello, to it

Acc. con ello, with it; por ello, for it; lo, it.

Reflective Personal Pronouns of the third person.

Of himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves, de si. To himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves, a si, se. Himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves, se.

Examples: Él habla de si mismo. He speaks of himself. Él se habla a si mismo. He talks to himself. He shaves himself.

VOCABULARY.

News, las noticias to expect, esperar to return, regresar, volver voyage, el viaje although, aunque uncertain, incierto he wrote, el escribió or ha escrito to say, decir saying diciendo to arrive, llegar passed, pasado a good place, un buen lugar absolutely, absolutamente tropical, tropical ideal, ideal to compare, comparar West India Islands, (West Indies), Indias Occidentales

the best, lo mejor every way, de todos modos colony, la colonia independent, independiente republic, la república immensely, inmensamente mineral, el mineral woods, maderas tobacco, el tabaco sugar, el azúcar population, la población citizen, el ciudadano difficult, dificil satisfied, satisfecho country, el pais really, verdaderamente known, conocido élite, elegante Cuban society, sociedad cubana.

EXERCISE XIII.

I. Have you news from your brother this week? 2. No, Sir, I have not had any news from him for two weeks. 3. When do you expect him to return from his voyage to Spain? 4. To-day fortnight, although a friend expected him last week. 5. How is that, is it so uncertain? 6. Yes, because a week ago he wrote saying that he was going on to Portugal. 7. This day week my niece arrives from Cuba, where she has passed the winter. 8. Is it a good place to pass the winter? 9. It is the best place I know, it is absolutely ideal. 10. But I believe that in summer it is very hot, is it not? II. Oh, yes, in summer it is absolutely tropical; the ideal months are November, December, January, February, March, and April. 12. How does Cuba compare with the other West India Islands? 13. It has always been the best in every way both as a Spanish colony and now as an independent Republic. 14. I understand that it is immensely rich in minerals, woods, tobacco. sugar, &c. 15. Yes, and it could easily maintain a population of 15,000,000. 16. I have several friends who have gone there and become Cuban citizens. 17. It is very difficult to be satisfied in any other country when one has really lived in Havana and known the élite of Cuban society. 18. Could you speak Spanish when you visited Havana? 19. I could speak it a little, but not as well as I do now. 20. Did your brother speak Spanish at that time, or has he learned it since then? 21. At that time he spoke Spanish very well, but since then he has had very little practice. 22. Does your sister speak Russian and Spanish? 23. She speaks Spanish much better than Russian, because Spanish is very easy, but Russian is very difficult. 24. Has she travelled in Russia this year? 25. No, not this year, but she hopes to travel in Russia next year.

LESSON XIV.

The Demonstrative Pronouns.

(Los pronombres demostrativos.)

SINGULAR.

Masc. Este, ese, aquel, this, that, yonder
Fem. esta, esa, aquella
Neut. esto, eso, aquello.

PLURAL.

estos, esos, aquellos

estas, esas, aquellas (No plural.) Este is used to point out that which is near to us, and corresponds to here: ese points out that which is at a distance, and corresponds to there; and aquel denotes remoteness, and corresponds to yonder. For example:

Este que tengo aquí. Ese que tiene V. ahí.

Aquel que tiene V. alla.

¿Quiere V. este mapa, ese o aquel?

This which I have here.
That (one) which you have there.

That (one) which you have yonder.

Do you want this map, that one, or that yonder?

Eso, that, is the most used of the three neuter forms, and is employed as much as the personal pronoun lo; for example: Eso se $har\acute{a}$, that will be done. When referring to abstract nouns the neuter pronoun is used, as: Esto es la verdad, this is the truth.

Possessive Pronouns. (Los pronombres posesivos.)

Sing. El mio, la mia, lo mio, mine.

Plur. los mios, las mias, mine.

Sing. El suyo, la suya, lo suyo, his, hers, its, yours, theirs. Plur. los suyos, las suyas, his, hers, its, yours, theirs.

Sing. El nuestro, la nuestra, lo nuestro, ours.

Plur. los nuestros, las nuestras, ours.

Possessive pronouns agree in gender and number with the nouns they represent, thus:

Esta casa es la nuestra. Este jardín es el nuestro. Estas casas son las mias.

This house is ours.
This garden is ours.
These houses are mine.

VOCABULARY.

Any, alguno, alguna difficulty, la dificultad to learn, uprender in learning, en aprender grammar, la gramática to find, hallar I find, hello

rule, la regla exceptiones, las exceptiones grammarians, gramáticos to seem, parecer they seem, parecen under, bajo impression, la impresión

VOCABULARY, continued:easy, fácil to compare, comparar compared with, comparado con other, otro, otra in most, almost all, en la mayor there is, there are, hay [parte too many, demasiado, -s (-a,-as) useless details, detalles inútiles it is because, es porque to forget, olvidar they forget, se olvidan the pupil, el discipulo the people, la gente to trouble, molestar technicalities, tecnicismos what is required, lo que se requiere practical knowledge, conocimiento práctico I agree, estoy de acuerdo I consider, considero I read, leo in that way, de ese modo

the student, el estudiante to desire, desear I also, yo también to notice, notar it is a pity, es una lástima to enter, entrar so much, tanto every line, cada línea to remember, recordar, acordar memory, la memoria retains, retiene longer, más tiembo vocabulary, el vocabulario alphabetical, alfabético the same, lo mismo to need, necesitar to suppose, suponer conversation, la conversación to include, incluir business, el negocio certainly, seguramente, ciertasufficient, suficiente.

EXERCISE XIV.

1. Have you any difficulty in learning the Grammar? 2. No, Madam, I have no difficulty, and I find Spanish Grammar very easy compared with that of other languages. 3. In almost all Grammars there are too many rules and exceptions 4. Many grammarians seem to be under the impression that the student desires to be a grammarian. 5. I also have noticed that, and it is a pity that they enter so much into useless details. 6. It is because they forget that all the pupil desires is to speak the every-day language of the people, and that he does not want to be troubled with the technicalities. 7. What is required is a practical knowledge of a language. 8. I agree with you, and I consider that what is required is less rules and more examples. 9. How do you learn the rules and examples? 10. I read the rules and write the examples two or three times, and in that way I learn them. II. Do you find the pronouns difficult? Do you write them? 12. I ind them very easy, but I write every line in order to remember; in this way the memory retains them longer. 13. Do you write them in this book or in that one? 14. I do not write them in this book nor in that, but in that one over there. 15. I have also a little bool for a vocabulary; this is it, you see it is alphabetical; on page A I write thus, Aunt, tia; another, otro, otra, &c. 16. That is a very good

Este is used to point out that which is near to us, and corresponds to *here*: **ese** points out that which is at a distance, and corresponds to *there*; and **aquel** denotes remoteness, and corresponds to *yonder*. For example:

Este que tengo aqui. Ese que tiene V. ahi.

This which I have here.
That (one) which you have there.

Aquel que tiene V. alla.

That (one) which you have yonder.

¿Quiere V. este mapa, ese o aquel?

Do you want this map, that one, or that yonder?

Eso, that, is the most used of the three neuter forms, and is employed as-much as the personal pronoun lo; for example: Eso se hará, that will be done. When referring to abstract nouns the neuter pronoun is used, as: Esto es la verdad, this is the truth.

Possessive Pronouns. (Los pronombres posesivos.)

Sing. El mio, la mia, lo mio, mine.

Plur. los mios, las mias, mine.

Sing. El suyo, la suya, lo suyo, his, hers, its, yours, theirs. Plur. los suyos, las suyas, his, hers, its, yours, theirs.

Sing. El nuestro, la nuestra, lo nuestro, ours.

Plur. los nuestros, las nuestras, ours.

Possessive pronouns agree in gender and number with the nouns they represent, thus:

Esta casa es la nuestra. Este jardin es el nuestro. Estas casas son las mias. This house is ours.
This garden is ours.
These houses are mine.

VOCABULARY.

Any, alguno, alguna difficulty, la dificultad to learn, aprender in learning, en aprender grammar, la gramdtica to find, hallar I find, hallo

rule, la regla
exceptions, las excepciones
grammarians, gramdticos
to seem, parecer
they seem, parecen
under, bajo
impression, la impresión

VOCABULARY, continued :-

easy, fácil to compare, comparar compared with, comparado con other, otro, otra in most, almost all, en la mayor there is, there are, hay parte too many, demasiado,-s (-a,-as) useless details, detalles inútiles it is because, es porque to forget, olvidar they forget, se olvidan the pupil, el discipulo the people, la gente to trouble, molestar technicalities, tecnicismos what is required, lo que se requiere practical knowledge, conocimiento práctico I agree, estoy de acuerdo I consider, considero I read. leo in that way, de ese modo

the student, el estudiante to desire, desear I also, yo también to notice, notar it is a pity, es una lástima to enter, entrar so much, tanto every line, cada línea to remember, recordar, acordar memory, la memoria retains, retiene longer, más tiembo vocabulary, el vocabulario alphabetical, alfabético the same. lo mismo to need, necesitar to suppose, suponer conversation, la conversación to include, incluir business, el negocio certainly, seguramente, ciertamente sufficient, suficiente.

EXERCISE XIV.

I. Have you any difficulty in learning the Grammar? 2. No, Madam, I have no difficulty, and I find Spanish Grammar very easy compared with that of other languages. 3. In almost all Grammars there are too many rules and exceptions. 4. Many grammarians seem to be under the impression that the student desires to be a grammarian. 5. I also have noticed that, and it is a pity that they enter so much into useless details. 6. It is because they forget that all the pupil desires is to speak the every-day language of the people, and that he does not want to be troubled with the technicalities. 7. What is required is a practical knowledge of a language. 8. I agree with you, and I consider that what is required is less rules and more examples. 9. How do you learn the rules and examples? 10. I read the rules and write the examils two or three times, and in that way I learn them. II. Do you find the pronouns difficult? Do you write them? 12. I find them very easy, but I write every line in order to remember; in this way the memory retains them longer. 13. Do you write them in this 14. I do not write them in this book nor in book or in that one? that, but in that one over there. 15. I have also a little bool for a vocabulary; this is it, you see it is alphabetical; on page A I write thus, Aunt, tia; another, otro, otra, &c. 16. That is a very good idea, I shall do the same. Can you tell me how many words I shall need? 17. It is considered that an educated man or woman requires a vocabulary of one thousand words. 18. I suppose that is for ordinary conversation, and does not include the terms required in any special business? 19. Certainly, only the ordinary conversation. 20. Now I understand. 21. Each profession and each business has its own terms, which have to be learned by those who are going to study for it. 22. Then as soon as I know one thousand words in Spanish and how to construct the sentences I shall know Spanish? 23. How many can I learn in a day? Let us say, about one hundred? 24. Then you would know the language in ten days; it is impossible. Let us say that you can learn ten new words each day and continue, this would give you more time to understand the language. 25. If you learn the vocabulary in Spanish Self-Taught you will find it sufficient.

LESSON XV.

Relative Pronouns. (Los pronombres relativos.)

These pronouns refer to a person or thing already mentioned. They are: que, quien, cual and cuyo. They are distinguished from the interrogatives by being written without the accent.

Examples of the use of the relative pronouns:

Una casa que ha vendido. Los soldados a quienes vi. Yo soy quien lo ha dicho. No se sabe cual llego ayer.

Los autores, cuyas obras he leido, son muy interesantes.

La madre a cuyos niños he visto ha llegado hoy.

A house which he has sold. The soldiers whom I saw. It is I who have said it. It is not known which arrived yesterday.

The authors, whose works I have read, are very interesting.

The mother whose children I have seen arrived to-day.

The Indefinite or Indeterminate Pronouns.

(Los pronombres indeterminados.)

These are: alguien, someone, anyone; nadie, no one; uno, one, some; cualquiera, whoever; quienquiera, whoever it may be, anyone (used only of persons). The two

latter have a plural formation, thus: cualesquiera and quienesquiera.

Alguien and nadie, refer to persons only, and are always used in the singular number. Alguno and ninguno are sometimes used instead of alguien and nadie.

There are a few more Indefinite Pronouns, e.g., tal, tales, such; cual...cual, and quién...quién can be translated "one...another," or "some...others." The plurals are cuales and quienes.

One does this, another that. Cual hace esto cual eso. Some read, others talk. Quien lee, quien habla.

VOCABULARY.

Letter, la carta written, escrito this week, esta semana postcard, la postal fountain pen, la pluma-tintero, la estilografica number, el número the same, mismo, misma horse, el caballo to buy, comprar; bought, comprado I bought, compré a pair, un par to-morrow, mañana to post, echar al correo posted, echado al correo doctor, el medico, doctor judge, el juez portrait, el retrato Seville, Sevilla a pastel portrait, un retrato al an oil painting, un cuadro al oleo an oil portrait, un retrato al oleo a water-colour, una acuarela nothing like, nada como durable, durable painting, la pintura art gallery, museo de pinturas the finest, la más hermosa full, lleno, llena priceless treasures, preciosos [tesoros to look, mirar looking, mirando good idea, buena idea [próximo to be able, poder next December, el Diciembre to escape, escapar recently, recientemente come in, entre cat, el gato dog, el perro.

EXERCISE XV.

How many letters have you written this week? 2. I have written one hundred and fifty letters and twenty postcards. 3. Is this your fountain pen or your brother's? 4. This one is mine, that one is my brother's, and that one over there is yours. 5. What is the number of your house? 6. It is Number 34, my brother's is 35, and my uncle's is 55, all in the same street. 7. How many houses have you bought from that man? 8. I bought a pair

yesterday, and shall buy one more to-morrow. 9. Have you posted all my letters? 10. I have only posted five this morning and six to-night. II. Do you wish to speak to my partner or to me? 12. I do not wish to speak to your partner, but to you. 13. Did you speak to the doctor yesterday? 14. I did not speak to him, but to the lawyer and to the judge. 15. Whose is that portrait that you received yesterday? 16. That is the portrait of a friend of mine who resides in Seville. 17. What is it, a water-colour, oil, or pastel? 18. It is a pastel, it looks more lifelike in pastel, although I prefer oil. 19. I also think there is nothing like an oil-painting, and besides it is the most durable. 20. I like painting very much; I studied three years at Madrid. 21. Did you see the Art Gallery at Madrid when you were in Spain? 22. Yes, it is considered one of the finest galleries in the world; it is full of valuable pictures. 23. I spent days looking at the paintings and hope to spend many more days there. 24. I should like to go with you the next time you visit Spain. 25. That is a very good idea, perhaps we shall be able to arrange the voyage for next winter; we can go on to Seville, and thus escape the London winter. 26. Is this the house (that) he sold recently? 27. The lawyer (whom) I saw yesterday told me it was that one. 28. Someone knocked. Come in! 29. It is no one; it was the cat or the dog.

LESSON XVI.

The Interrogative Pronouns.

The Interrogatives are always accented; they are: ¿Qué? what?; ¿cuál? which?; ¿quién? who?; ¿de quién? of whom?; ¿cuyo? cúya? whose? The plural forms are: ¿cuáles? ¿quiénes? ¿cúyos? cúyas?

¿ Quién habla? Who speaks?

¿ Qué escribe V.? What do you write?

¿ De quién es este libro? Whose is this book?

¿ Quien llama a la puerta? Who is knocking at the door?

¿ Quiénes han llegado ayer? Who arrived yesterday? ¿ De quién es este sobre? Whose is this envelope?

¿ Cuál es mi bastón? Which is my stick?

Qué is also used in exclamatory sentences, thus:

¡Qué lindo! How pretty! ¡Qué feo! How ugly!

If the substantive be followed by an adjective, tan, so, is placed before the adjective, thus:

¡ Qué señorita tan simpática! What a kind young lady! ¡ Qué dia tan hermoso! ¡ Qué árbol más alto!

What a beautiful day! What a high tree!

VOCABULARY.

To pass, pasar is it yours? ¿es de Vd.? favour, el favor will you, ¿quiere Vd.? [favor do me the favour, hagame el with pleasure, con gusto Christopher Columbus, Cristobal travel, viaje Colón discovery, el descubrimiento instructive, instructivo beautiful, hermoso to cost, costar to remember, acordar years ago, hace años song, canción songs, canciones Peruvian, peruano, a popular, popular singer, el cantor, la cantatriz practice, práctica voice, la voz

to play the piano, tocar el piano guitar, la guitara violin, el violín learning, aprendiendo harp, el arpa, pl. las arpas last train, el último tren amateur, el aficionado in public, en público charity concerts, conciertos de beneficiencia at two o'clock, a las dos very long (time), mucho tiempo that depends, eso depende the degree, el grado proficiency, la proficiencia talent, talento although, aunque the king of instruments, el vev de los instrumentos lack, la falta personality, la personalidad.

EXERCISE XVI.

I. I have my book, but whose is this (book)? Is it yours? 2. Yes, Miss Alvarez, it is mine, will you do me the favour to pass it to me? 3. With pleasure, here it is. I think it is a very interesting book. 4. Oh, yes, I read it last year; it is the History of Christopher Columbus. 5. Do you like reading books of travel and discovery? 6. They are very interesting and instructive. 7. What a beautiful book it is! What did it cost? 8. I do not remember, I bought it many years ago in Spain. 9. How many songs did you receive from your friend in Lima? 10. He sent me two Peruvian songs, and my cousin in Madrid sent me six popular songs. 11. I should like to sing, but I have no voice. 12. I once heard a singer say that no one should say that, because with practice anyone can improve the voice. 13. I can play the piano and the

Habria I should bi-

guitar, and now I am learning to play the violin. 14. A friend of mine is learning to play the harp, and says it is very difficult. 15. Was it your friend who arrived yesterday with that beautiful harp? 16. Yes, he arrived by the last train at two o'clock in the morning. 17. Does he play in public, or is he an amateur? 18. He is an amateur, and only plays in public at charity concerts. 19. Did it take him very long to learn? 20. About six years, but he worked very hard to make himself proficient. 21. I did not think (that) it would take so long to play well? 22. That all depends on the degree of proficiency desired, and the talent of the pupil. 23. Although I like the harp I prefer the piano, which is really the king of instruments. 24. Do you like the mechanical pianos? 25. Not at all, they lack that personal touch which makes all the difference.

LESSON XVII.

The Verbs. (Los verbos.)

All the verbs of the Spanish language have their infinitive endings in ar, er, or ir, respectively.

There are four Auxiliary Verbs: Haber and Tener, to have, and Ser and Estar, to be.

Haber.

Infinitive Present.
Present Participle.
Past Participle.

Haber, to have. Habiendo, having. Habido, had.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Yo he, I have

tu has, thou hast

el, ella, (V.) ha, he, she has (you) have ellos, ellas (Vs.) han, they have, (you) have. pl.

nosotros (nosotras) hemos,
we have
vosotros (vosotras) habeis,
you have
ellos, ellas (Vs.) han, they
have, (you) have, pl.

IMPERFECT. (Semi-past Tense.)

habías, thou hadst había, he, she, you had habían, they had.

Había, I had (I was having) | habíamos, we had or were habíais, you had [having

PAST DEFINITE.

Hube, I had hubimos, we had hubiste, thou hadst hubisteis, you (ye) had hubo, he, she, it, had: hubieron, they had.

FUTURE.

Habré, I shall have habrás, thou wilt have habrá, he, she, it, will have habrán, they will have.

habremos, we shall have

CONDITIONAL.

Habria, I should have habrías, thou wouldst have habríais, you would have habria, he, she, it, would have habrian, they would have.

habriamos, we should have

IMPERATIVE.

He tu, have thou haya él, let him have, have hayan ellos, let them have.

hayamos nosotros, let us [vou | habed vosotros, have [have

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Haya, (that) I have or may | hayamos, (that) we have hayas, thou have [have hayáis, you have haya. he have hayan, they have. he have hava,

hayan,

IMPERFECT.

Hubiese, I had, might have | hubiésemos, we had hubieses, thou hadst hubieseis, you had hubiese, he, she, it, had

hubiesen, they had.

FUTURE.

Hubiere, that (or if) I shall | hubiéremos, we shall have have hubieres, thou wilt have hubereis, you will have

hubiere, he, she, it, will have | hubieren, they will have.

CONDITIONAL.

hubiera, he, she, it, would -- hubieran, they would have.

Hubiera, I should have | hubiéramos, we should have hubieras, thou wouldst have hubierais, you would have The personal pronouns are omitted before the verb, except when special stress is intended to be placed upon them or when there might be some ambiguity.

There is and there are are translated by hay, which is the third person of Haber used impersonally; in the indicative present it can be substituted by ha.

Haber only helps to form the compound tenses of other verbs, thus:

He visto. He escrito. He comido. Ha llegado. Ha llamado. I have seen.
I have written.
I have eaten or dined.
He has arrived.
He has called.

VOCABULARY.

News, las noticias read, (p.p.), leido an idea, una idea, happens, sucede house, la casa if he likes, si le guste large, grande twice, dos veces size, tamaño garden, el jardín cultivate, cultivar flower(s), la(s) flor(es) expensive, costoso seeds, las semillas to live in the country, vivir en el campo

far, lejos very far, muy lejos town, la ciudad mile, la milla acre, el acre (4046.87 metros cuadrados) because, porque enjoy, gozav health, la salud there, alli everyone, todos convenient, conveniente just, justamente what I find, lo que hallo hour, la hora train, el tren.

EXERCISE XVII.

1. What is the news to-day? Have you seen the newspaper?
2. There is nothing new. I have read three newspapers. 3. Do you read many newspapers?
4. I generally read two or three, so as to have an idea what is happening.
5. Had your friend arrived when you came out?
6. No, I have not seen him for some months, but I expect to see him to-morrow.
7. I have received your letter this morning, but not your uncle's.
8. If I had seen him I should have told him about that business.
9. When are you going to see your partner about that house?
10. I will see him to-morrow,

I want to know if he likes the house. II. Is it a large house or a small one? 12. It is twice the size of this house, and has a large garden. 13. Do you cultivate your garden? 14. I like flowers, but it is very expensive to have a large garden. 15. Yes, I know, but one can have a small garden without much expense. I think it is much better to have a small garden. 17. Where do you buy the seeds? 18. My brother, who lives in the country, sends me seeds every year. 19. Does he live very far from town? 20. He lives nearly twenty miles from here, and has about ten acres. 21. Does he like to live in the country better than in town? 22. He lives in the country because he enjoys better health there than in town. 23. I think it is better for every one to live in the country, but it is not convenient for business. 24. You are right, and I do not like to pass two or three hours a day in a train.

LESSON XVIII.

The Auxiliary Verb Tener.

Infinitive Present. Tener, to have. Past Participle. Tenido, had.

Present Participle. Teniendo, having.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Tengo, I have tienes, thou hast tiene, he, she, has (you have) | tienen, they have.

tenemos, we have tenéis, vou have

IMPERFECT.

Tenía, I had (was having) tenías, thou hadst tenía, he had

teníamos, we had teníais, you had tenían, they had,

PAST DEFINITE.

Tuve. I had tuviste, thou hadst tuvo, he had

tuvimos, we had tuvisteis, you had tuvieron, they had.

Tendré, I shall have tendrás, thou wilt have tendrá, he will have

tendremos, we shall have tendréis, you will have tendrán, they will have.

CONDITIONAL.

Tendría, I should have tendrías, thou wouldst have tendríais, you would have tendría, he would have

tendriamos, we should have tendrian, they would have.

IMPERATIVE.

Ten tú, have thou [(vou) tenga, let him have, have tengan, let them have.

tengamos, let us have tened, have

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT

Tenga, (that) I have tengas, thou have tenga, he have

tengamos, (that) we have tengáis, you have tengan, they have.

IMPERFECT.

Tuviese, (that) I had tuvieses, thou hadst tuviese, he had

tuviésemos, (that) we had tuvieseis, you had tuviesen, they had.

FUTURE.

Tuviere, (that or if) I shall | tuviéremos, we shall have have tuvieres, thou wilt have tuviere, he will have

tuviereis, you will have

tuvieren, they will have.

CONDITIONAL.

Tuviera, (that) I should | tuviéramos, (that) we should have tuvieras, thou wouldst have tuvierais, you would have tuviera, he would have

tuvieran, they would have.

The compound tenses are formed with the verb haber, thus: He tenido, I have had; and so on throughout, prefixing the respective tenses of haber to the participle tenido. (Haber is similarly used before all the active verbs.)

VOCABULARY.

Ticket, el billete, el boleto
express (train), el tren expreso
yet, todavia
ticket office, la taquilla, el despacho de billetes, la boleteria
opposite, enfrente
return ticket, billete de ida y
vuelta
to return to-day, volver hoy
time-table, el horario
this time, esta vez
to fish, pescar; fishing, la
to hunt, cazar [pesca
golf, el golf

to swim, nadar slow, despacio too slow, demasiado despacio too slow, demasiado despacio I prefer, prefiero sport, el deporte country (nation), el país written, escrito sells well, se vende bien work (literary), la obra writer, el escritor fortune, la fortuna good income, buena renta if it is nice weather, si hace buen tiempo.

EXERCISE XVIII.

I. Have you a ticket for the next express train? 2. No, I have not bought my ticket yet, but I am going to at once. 3. Can you tell me where the ticket office is? 4. Go up these stairs and you will find the ticket office on the right or on the left. 5. I want a return ticket to Cadiz, what is the price to return to-day? 6. How long will it take to get there by express? 7. By the ordinary train it will take two hours, by express one hour and a half. 8. Have you a time-table? This one is a very old one. 9. Here you have one for this month. 10. How long will you stay in the country this time? II. This time I will not stay more than two or three weeks. 12. What will you do in the country, -fish, hunt, golf, or swim? 13. Fishing is too slow, hunting does not interest me, but I like swimming. 14. I prefer golf to all other sports, it is the best exercise. 15. It seems that golf is the most popular sport in this country. 16. Have you read your friend's book on sport? 17. Yes, it is very interesting, and well written, and sells well. 18. Is it his first work? I think I have seen other works by him. 19. It is his fifth work, in fact he is a very popular writer. 20. Has he made a fortune with his works on sports? 21. Not a fortune, but his works bring him a good income. 22. Have you read all the works that he has written? 23. No, I have only read two of them, the one on golf, and the one on hunting. 24. Is your friend going to play golf next Saturday? 25. He plays golf every Saturday, if it is nice weather.

LESSON XIX

The Auxiliary Verb Ser.

Infinitive Present. Ser, to be. Present Participle. Siendo, being. Past Participle. Sido, been.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Soy, I am somos, we are eres, thou art sois, you are es, he, she, it is, you are son, they are.

IMPERFECT.

Era, I used to be or was eras, thou wast erais, you were era, he was eran, they were.

PAST DEFINITE.

Fui, I was fuiste, thou wast fué, he was

Fui, I was | fuimos, we were fuisteis, you were fueron, they were.

FUTURE.

Seré, I shall be serás, thou wilt be serás, the will be serán, they will be.

Sería, I should be serías, thou wouldst be sería, he would be sería, he would be serían, they would be.

IMPERATIVE.

Sé tú, be thou sea, be you seamos, let us be sed, be ye sean, let them be.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT. Sea, (that, if) I be seamos, we be seas, thou be seais, you be sea, the be sean, they be. (51)

IMPERFECT.

Fuese, I were fueses, thou wert fuese, he were fuésemos, we were fueseis, you were fuesen, they were.

FUTURE.

Fuere, (if) I shall be fueres, thou wilt be fuere, he will be

fuéremos, we shall be fuereis, you will be fueren, they will be.

CONDITIONAL.

Fuera, (that) I should be fueras, thou wouldst be fuera, he would be

fueramos, we should be fuerais, you would be fueran, they would be.

The Auxiliary Verb Ser, to be, is used to express what persons or things are, and their mode of being; it represents permanent state.

The **Passive Voice** of an active verb is generally formed by the tenses of the auxiliary **ser** and the past participle of the verb; the latter must agree with the subject in gender and number, thus:

Soy amado (masc.). Soy amada (fem.). I am loved.
I am loved.

Cubana.

Serás amado (masc.). Thou wilt be loved. Serás amado (fem.).

When the action is in the present and refers to a state or condition estar can be used, as:

Esta casa está bien situada. This house is well located.

VOCABULARY.

Engineer, el ingeniero famous, famoso lucrative, provechoso profession, 'a profesión to excel, sobresalir besides, además apart, aparte profit, la ganancia, el provecho great pianist, gran pianista fame, la fama extended, extendido countries, los paises marvellously, maravillosato practise, practicar [mente

each day, cada dia
have you heard? ¿ha oido Vd.?
Havana, la Habana
is it not true? ¿no es verdad?
other cities, otras ciudades
next year, el año próximo, el año
therefore, por esto [que viene
money, el dinero
Ecuador, el Ecuador
climate, el clima
to make more money, ganar
mucho más dinero
Cuban Republic, la República

EXERCISE XIX.

I. What will your son be, a lawyer, doctor, or engineer? 2. I think he will be an engineer, because it is the most lucrative. 3. Of course, if one becomes famous, but otherwise I do not consider it very lucrative. 4. Well, that can be said of almost any profession, it is only the man who excels who makes much. 5. Besides the profit, or, I should say, apart from the profit, he prefers engineering to any other profession. 6. Has your cousin become a great pianist? 7. He is a great pianist in his own country, but his fame has not extended to other countries. 8. Has it taken him a long time to become famous? 9. Nearly twenty years, but he played marvellously ten years ago. 10. Does he still practise much each day? II. I believe that he practises at least five hours each day. 12. Do you play the piano? 13. No, I do not play the piano, but I play the guitar and the violin. 14. Have you heard the famous Spanish pianist? 15. Yes, I heard him here and in Paris last year. 16. Were you a lawyer ten years ago? 17. No, Miss, I was a doctor, but not liking the work, I became a lawyer. 18. Have you seen your cousin, who returned from Montevideo last week? 19. I have not seen him yet, but I hope to see him to-night. 20. I believe that when he was in Uruguay you were in Havana, is it not so? 21. Yes, Madam, and I visited several other cities of the Cuban Republic. 22. Do you intend to return this year or next? 23. Next year, because I believe business will be better, therefore I shall have more money. 24. Has your friend been to Ecuador this year? 25. Yes, he likes the climate, and he can make plenty of money there.

LESSON XX.

The Auxiliary Verb Estar.

Infinitive Present. Present Participle. Past Participle.

Estar, to be. Estando, being. Estado, been.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Estoy, I am estás, thou art está, he is estamos, we are estáis, you are están, they are.

IMPERFECT.

estaba, he was estaban, they were.

Estaba, I was estábamos, we were estabas, thou wast estabais, you were

PAST DEFINITE.

Estuve. I was estuviste, thou wast estuvo, he was

estuvimos, we were estuvisteis, you were estuvieron, they were.

FUTURE.

estarás, thou wilt be

Estaré, I shall be estaremos, we shall be estaréis, you will be estará, he will be estarán, they will be.

CONDITIONAL.

estaría, he would be estarían, they would be.

Estaría, I should be estaríamos, we should be estarías, thou wouldst be estaríais, you would be

IMPERATIVE.

Está (tú), be (thou) este, let him be, be (you) estén, let them be.

estemos, let us be estad, be (you)

ban examily all sold Subjunctive. The sale soldies of more

PRESENT.

Esté, (if or that) I be estés, thou be he be esté.

estemos, we be estéis, you be they be. estén,

IMPERFECT.

Estuviese, (if) I were he were estuviese,

estuviésemos, we were estuvieses, thou wert estuvieseis, you were estuviesen, they were.

FUTURE.

Estuviere, (that) I shall be estuviéremos, we shall be estuvieres, thou wilt be estuviereis, you will be estuviere, he will be estuvieren, they will be.

CONDITIONAL.

Estuviera, (that) I should be | estuviéramos, we should be estuvieras, thou wouldst be estuvierais, you would be estuviera, he would be estuvieran, they would be.

When we wish to express the state, condition or location of persons or things, and the mode of that state, condition or location, in a relative manner, then Estar must be used, and the permanent state by the verb Ser. For example:

Esta puerta es grande. Esta puerta está abierta. La casa es grande y está en The house is large and it is Londres. Esa niña es bonita: Ella es feliz. Esa señora está contenta. Ese muchacho está enfermo. Esa mujer es enfermiza.

This door is large. This door is open. in London. That little girl is pretty. She is happy. That lady is content. That boy is ill (sick). That woman is sickly.

VOCABULARY.

Seen, visto situated, situado, a wide, ancho, a narrow, angosto, a; esirecho, a street, la calle a flat, un piso convenient, conveniente family, la familia high, alto, alta belongs, pertenece a friend of mine, un amigo mio to wish, desear wishes, (v.) desea to sell, vender for sale, por venta value, el valor double, el doble so many, tantos, tantas out of town, afuera de la ciudad understand, comprender

I understand, comprendo so easy, tan fácil to go out, salir motor car, el automóvil to do, hacer; done, hecho doing, haciendo studying, estudiando law, la ley sure, seguro to play golf, jugar golf the old cathedral, la antigua catedral are you going? eva Vd. ?** omnibus, el omnibus longer distance, más distancia have you been? ¿ha estado Vd.? undoubtedly, sin duda I have heard, he oido decir that is true, es verdad picture, el cuadro.

EXERCISE XX.

and the second section of the second

I. Have you seen your friend's house? Not yet. 2. His house is well situated, and very large. 3. Is it in a wide or narrow street? 4. It is in a very wide street, and has a very fine garden. 5. Do you like to have a house or a flat? 6. I like to have a house, but a flat is more convenient for a small family. 7. Whose is that high house? Is it your brother's? 8. No, it belongs to a friend of mine, and he wishes to sell it. 9. What is the value of the house? 10. I do not know the value, but my friend is asking double what he paid for it. II. How is it that there are so many houses for sale in this street? 12. Because many people prefer to live out of town. 13. I understand that, because it is so easy to go out to the country by motor car or express train. 14. What is your friend's brother doing in Paris? 15 I think he is studying law, but I am not sure. 16 Are you going to play golf to-morrow with your friends from Havana? 17. No, we are going to St. Albans, to see the old cathedral. 18. Are you going by omnibus or by motor car? 19. We are going by motor omnibus, because in that way we can see more of the country. 20. Undoubtedly you can see a longer distance from the top of an omnibus than from a motor car. 21. Have you been to Richmond and Kew Gardens yet? 22. I have seen them, and now I wish to see Hampton Court; I have heard there are many fine pictures there. 23. That is true, but if you wish to see very fine pictures go to Windsor Castle. 24. Did you go up the Giralda when you were in Seville last year? 25. Yes, Miss, and the view is very beautiful on a sunny day. 26. What I liked best was the old cathedral.

LESSON XXI.

The Regular Verbs. (Les verbos regulares.)

There are three conjugations in Spanish, consisting respectively of the verbs that have their infinitive endings in **ar**, **er**, and **ir**.

First Conjugation: ar.

Example: Hablar, to speak.

Infinitive Present. Hablar, to speak.

Present Participle. Hablando, speaking.

Past Participle. Hablado, spoken.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Hablo, I speak hablas, thou speakest habla, he speaks

hablamos, we speak habláis, you speak hablan, they speak.

IMPERFECT.

Hablaba, I was speaking hablabas, thou wast speaking hablaba, he was speaking

hablábamos, we were -speaking hablabais, you were hablaban, they were

PAST DEFINITE.

Hablé, I spoke hablaste, thou didst speak habló, he spoke

hablamos, we spoke hablasteis, you spoke hablaron, they spoke.

FUTURE.

Hablaré, I shall speak hablarás, thou wilt speak hablará, he will speak

hablaremos, we shall speak hablaréis, you will speak hablarán, they will speak.

CONDITIONAL.

Hablaría, I should speak hablarías, thou wouldst sbeak hablaría, he would speak hablaríamos, we should speak hablaríais, you would speak hablarian, they would speak

IMPERATIVE.

Habla, speak (thou) hable, let him speak, speak | hablen, let them speak.

hablemos, let us speak hablad, speak

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Hable, (if, that) I may speak hables, thou mayest speak hable, he may speak

hablemos, we may speak vou may speak habléis, hablen, they may speak.

IMPERFECT.

Hablase, (if, that) I might | hab asemos, we might speak speak

hablases, thou might speak hablase,

hablaseis, you might speak he might speak hablasen, they might speak.

FUTURE.

Hablare, (that) I might | hablaremos, we might speak hablares, thou might speak hablareis, you might speak

hablares, thou might speak hablareis, you might speak hablaren, they might speak.

CONDITIONAL.

Hablara, (that) I should | hablaramos, we should | speak | hablaras, thou shouldst ,, hablara, he would speak | hablaran, they would speak.

VOCABULARY.

About, de, cerca de to hope, esperar I hope, espero to see him, verle the prospects, el porvenir court, el tribunal clearly, claramente eloquently, elocueniemente learning, aprendiendo dinner, la comida music, la música art, el arte dining-room, el comedor Peruvian, peruano, a visiting, visitando very long, mucho tiempo during, durante summer, el verano gallery, la galeria

to find, hallar painting, la pintura easy, fácil easier, más fácil very little, muy poco, a practice, práctica novel, la novela comfortable, comfortable room, el cuarto little room, el cuartico furnished, amueblado handsome, hermoso, a better, mejor thank you, gracias bad, malo built, construido well-known, bien conocido architect, el arquitecto.

EXERCISE XXI.

I. Did you speak to your father about your voyage to Argentina?

2. Not yet, but I hope to see him to-night, and will speak to him about the prospects in that country.

3. When did you speak to your partner about that business?

4. I spoke to him yesterday, and we arranged the business.

5. How did your lawyer speak in court?

6. He spoke clearly and eloquently and won the case.

7. How many languages do you speak?

8. I speak five languages, and am now learning another.

9. What did you all talk about last night after dinner?

10. We talked about music and art, and the new picture by a Spanish artist.

11. Who was speaking in the

dining-room this evening? 12. It was a Teruvian lady who is visiting this country. 13. Will she stay here very long, or is she going on to Paris? 14. I think she will stay here during the summer, and go to Seville for the winter. 15. Did you speak about the concert to your wife and daughter? 16. No, Miss, we spoke about the new paintings at the gallery. 17. Which do you find easier, to speak or to write Spanish? 18. I find it much easier to write than to speak, because I have very little practice in speaking. 19. That is the same with all languages, conversation is always the most difficult. 20. It is very good practice to read good novels and newspapers. 21. Yes, I find it so, and I have read many very good novels. 22. Have you ever seen a more comfortable room than this one? 23. Besides being comfortable, it is well-furnished and handsome. 24. How is your son? Have you seen him to-day? 25. He is much better, thank you, but he does not go out yet because the weather is so bad. 26. Who built the house in which your friend is living? A very well-known architect,

LESSON XXII.

Second Conjugation: er.

Example:—Aprender, to learn.

Infinitive Present. Past Participle.

Aprender, to learn. Present Participle. Aprendiendo, learning. Aprendido, learnt.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Aprendo, I learn aprendemos, we learn aprendes, thou learnest aprende, he learns

aprendéis, you learn aprenden, they learn.

IMPERFECT.

Aprendía, I was learning aprendías, thou wast learning aprendía, he was learning | aprendían, they were

aprendíamos, we were learning aprendíais, you were

PAST DEFINITE.

Aprendí, I learned aprendiste, thou didst learn | aprendisteis, you learned aprendió, he learned aprendieron, they learned.

aprendimos, we learned

FUTURE.

Aprenderé, I shall learn aprenderás, thou wilt learn aprenderá, he will learn

aprenderemos, we shall learn aprenderéis, vou will learn aprenderán, they will learn.

CONDITIONAL.

Aprendería, I should learn aprenderías, thou shouldst learn aprendería, he should

aprenderíamos, we should aprenderíais, you should ,, aprenderían, they should ...

IMPERATIVE.

Aprende, learn (thou) aprenda, let himlearn, learn | aprendan, let them learn.

aprendamos, let us learn aprended, learn (vou)

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT

Aprenda, (that) I maylearn aprendas, thou mayest, aprenda, he may learn

aprendamos, we may learn aprendáis, you may learn aprendan, they may learn.

IMPERFECT:

Aprendiese, (that) I might learn aprendieses, thou mightest learn aprendiese, he might learn

aprendiésemos, we might learn aprendieseis, vou might aprendiesen, they might ,,

FUTURE. (Rarely used.)

Aprendiere, I might, would, or should learn learn aprendieres, thou mightest aprendiere, he might learn

aprendiéremos, we might learn aprendiereis, you would ,, aprendieren, they might ...

CONDITIONAL.

Aprendiera, I should learn aprendieras, thou wouldst learn aprendiera, he would learn

aprendiéramos, we should learn aprendierais, youwould " aprendieran, they would ,,

Reflexive Verbs. (Yerbos reflexivos)

Almost all active verbs may become reflexive in Spanish. Many of them can be rendered in English by neuter verbs; for example, a verb without a direct object, thus: *Me alegro*, I rejoice. The objective pronoun must be of the same person as the subject, and each person is conjugated with a double personal pronoun. The nominative pronoun is generally included in the verb in Spanish, in English it is expressed; thus, in the infinitive, *amarse*, to love one's self.

The reflexive pronouns used in the conjugation of reflexive verbs are: me, te, se, nos, os, se, the translation of which is, myself, thyself, himself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves. Se also means herself and oneself.

INDICATIVE PRESENT.

Me amo.	I love myself.
Te amas.	Thou lovest thyself.
Se ama.	He loves himself.
Nos amamos.	We love ourselves.
Os amais.	You love yourselves.
Se aman.	They love themselves

All the other tenses are conjugated in the same way.

The Spanish reflexive verbs are also used to denote reciprocity, thus: Ellos se aman, they love one another, or, they love themselves.

VOCABULARY.

Difficulty, la dificultad in learning, en aprender verb, el verbo is needed, se necesita a little attention, un poco atenperson, la persona [ción singular, el singular plural, el plural conjugation, la conjugación that is, eso es the way, manner, el modo each, cada tense, el tiempo necessary, necesario

to notice, notar
particularly, particularmente
the first person, la primera perform, la forma [sona
the key (to a book), la clave
to the rest, a lo demás
of course, por supuesto
to signify, significar
signifies, significa
a good example, un buen ejemplo
understand, comprender
the following, los siguientes
to know (a person), conocer
to know (something), saber

VOCABULARY, continued:how to employ, como emplear difference, la diferencia between, entre imperfect, el imperfecto past definite, el pasado definido to read, leer I was reading, estaba leyendo again, otra vez future, futuro the easiest, el más fácil to remember, recordar associating, asociando good way, buen modo almost all, casi todos to end, acabar

United States, Estados Unidos he used to study, estudiaba I believe, creo conditional, el condicional subjunctive, el subjuntivo to show, mostrar I will show you, le mostraré to strike off, quitar Ah! ; Ah! practically, prácticamente the same, lo mismo imperative, el imperativo disappeared, desaparecido many thanks, muchas gracias.

EXERCISE XXII.

I. Do you find any difficulty in learning the verbs? 2. No, I think they are very easy; all that is needed is a little attention. 3. It is true, and some only learn the first and third person of the singular and plural. 4. In the first conjugation this would be: I speak, you speak, we speak, they speak. 5. Yes, that is the way I learn each tense, because it is not necessary to learn thou learnest or ve learn. 6. When I learn a verb I notice particularly the first person, as that forms the key to the rest. 7. Of course that is the only way to learn rapidly. 8. What is the difference in the meaning of the verbs saber and conocer? 9. Will you give me some examples of the use of these two verbs? 10. A good example of the use of these two verbs is the following. II. Do you know who knows that man? I know that your son knows him. 12. I now know how to employ these two verbs, and I shall have no more difficulty. 13. I cannot understand the difference between the Imperfect and the Past Definite. 14. That can be explained very easily. The Imperfect, for example: I was reading when you came. 15. The Past Definite: I saw him last year. You understand I cannot see him again last year. 16. Other examples of the Imperfect: We then lived in the United States. He used to study his lessons every day. 17. I believe (that) the Future is the easiest. I can always remember it by associating it with the English word Future. 18. Yes, that is a very good way, because almost all the First Persons of the Future tense end in re, thus: I shall speak, I shall learn, &c. 19. The Conditional is also easy, as it ends in ria, thus: hablaria, aprenderia. 20. But the difficulty is in remembering the Subjunctive. 21. I will show you how you can make it very easy Take the Past Definite of hablar, that is to say, hablaron, strike off the termination ron, and add se, re and ra. 22. Ah! Now I understand: Hablase, hablare, hablare; but how do you remember the Present Subjunctive? 23. It is practically the same as the third person of the Imperative. 24. All my difficulties have disappeared; many thanks.

LESSON XXIII.

Third Conjugation: ir.

Infinitive Present.
Present Participle.
Past Participle.

Vivir, to live. Viviendo, living. Vivido, lived.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Vivo, I live vives, thou livest vive, he lives vivimos, we live vivis, you live viven, they live.

IMPERFECT.

Vivía, I lived, was living vivías, thou wast living vivía, he lived

vivíamos, we lived, were livvivíais, you lived [ing vivían, they lived.

PAST DEFINITE,

Viví, I lived viviste, thou livedst, didst vivió, he lived [live

vivimos, we lived vivisteis, you lived [live vivieron, they lived.

FUTURE.

Viviré, I shall live vivirás, thou wilt live vivirá, he will live viviremos, we shall live vivireis, you will live viviran, they will live.

CONDITIONAL.

Viviria, I should live vivirias, thou wouldst live viviria, he would live

viviríamos, we should live viviríais, you would live vivirían, they would live.

IMPERATIVE.

Vive, live (thou) viva, let him live, live

vivamos, let us live vivid, live (you) vivan, let them live.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Viva, I live or may live vivas, thou live viva, he live vivamos, we live vivais, you live vivan, they live.

IMPERFECT.

Viviese, I lived or might live vivieses, thou lived viviese, he lived

viviésemos, we lived vivieseis, you lived viviesen, they lived.

FUTURE.

Viviere, I shall live vivieres, thou wilt live viviere, he would live viviéremos, we shall live viviereis, you would live vivieren, they will live.

CONDITIONAL.

Viviera, I should live vivieras, thou wouldst live viviera, he would live viviéramos, we should live vivierais, you would live vivieran, they would live.

The Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

The Subjunctive Mood expresses condition, hypothesis, contingency, and is generally used in a clause subordinate to another clause or verb.

The Subjunctive is employed after certain conjunctions, such as: Si, que, aunque, a fin de que, con tal que, antes que, &c., &c.

The difficulty in translating the Subjunctive is due to the fact that none of the English moods correspond exactly to the Spanish Subjunctive; it is often translated into English by the indicative or infinitive.

It is just as difficult for an Englishman to employ the Subjunctive properly in Spanish as it is for someone who is learning English to make proper use of *might*, *could*, *should*, and *would*. It is simply a question of practice and reading good authors.

A good rule is: If you are certain of something use the Indicative. Example:

Write to the two friends who have arrived. Escriba a los dos amigos que han llegado.

If you are in doubt use the Subjunctive. Example: Write to those who may have arrived. Escriba a los que hayan llegado.

The subordinate verb is put in the Subjunctive when the leading verb implies admiration, wish, will, desire, consent, prohibition, necessity, command, doubt, regret, joy, sorrow, usefulness, contentment, hope, fear, surprise, ignorance, preference, negation or permission.

Sequence of Tenses.

Use the Present Subjunctive,

(a) preceded by que, for a contingent action going on at the present time or to take place in the future; e.g.

Dudo que llegue hoy.
I doubt (that) he will arrive to-day.

- (b) in requests and commands made in a negative form; e.g. No lo haga. Do not do i.
 - (c) in exclamations, e.g. j Ojalá venga hoy! Oh, that he may come to-day!
 - (d) instead of the Imperative with negatives; i.e. the same as (b).

Use the Imperfect Subjunctive preceded by que in subordinate clauses depending on a past tense in the principal sentence; e.g. Temía que no le escribiésen a tiempo. He feared (or I feared) that they might not write to you in time.

The Imperfect and the Conditional Subjunctive can be interchanged.

Use the Future Subjunctive in a subordinate clause referring to a Future, Present Subjunctive or Imperative in the principal sentence. The Future Subjunctive is the

least employed of the Subjunctive tenses; it represents a contingent action to take place some time hence; e.g.

Le avisaré a Vd. lo que me dijere.

I shall let you know what he may say to me.
¡Venga lo que viniere!

Come what may!

Use the Conditional Subjunctive when the verb of the principal sentence is in the Conditional; e.g.

Compraría casas si tuviese (tuviera) dinero.
I should buy houses if I had money.

Note.—The Conditional of the Subjunctive may be employed instead of the Imperfect Subjunctive.

VOCABULARY.

To doubt, dudar to come, venir he came, vino it would be, sería to start, salir, partir [punto punctually, puntualmente, en let him come, que venga to trouble, molestarse to be sorry, sentir astronomy, la astronomía there are some, hay algunos I like, me gusta (or) a mi me gusta do you like, le gusta a Vd. fortune, la fortuna courage, el valor another country, otro pais to ask a question, preguntar to ask for something bedir

he asked me, me suplicó he asked me, me preguntó to wish, desear to pass (spend) a few months, pasar unos meses ranch, la estancia together, juntos to understand, comprender the use, el uso systematically, sistematicamente more than, más de to divide, dividir class, la clase simple, sencillo, simple I notice, noto the only irregularity, la sola irregularidad the rest, lo demás like, como.

EXERCISE XXIII.

r. I doubt whether he will come to-day, because he came yesterday. 2. It would be well not to arrive late, as the train starts at eight punctually. 3. Do not do it this week, leave it for next week. 4. Do not go to Peru this year, because my partner is coming, and wishes to see you. 5. Let him come in, as I must see him to-day. 6. How sorry I am for you to trouble yourself. 7. I did not think you were studying astronomy. 8. If I had interesting books on astronomy I would read them. 9. I thought you would not find

any, but there are some. 10. Do you like astronomy? Yes, I like it very much. II. If I liked astronomy, I should obtain the necessary books. 12. Would you go to Buenos Ayres if you had money? 13. No, but I want to go there to make a fortune, 14. There are many who wish to have more money, but they have not the courage to go to another country.

15. He asked me to see you and tell you the advantages of Peru.

16. I have just received a letter from my cousin in Montevideo.

17. He says: I wish you would come, that we might spend a few months together at my ranch near this city." 18. I shall leave for Uruguay next week, and I shall write you what he tells (may tell) me about the matter. 19. Do you understand the use of the Subjunctive in Spanish? 20. Yes, sir, I see no difficulty in employing it correctly, but what I should like to know is, are there many irregular verbs, and are they difficult? 21. There are about five hundred, but they are not difficult if learned systematically. 22. Is it necessary for me to learn the conjugation of each of them? 23. It is not necessary to learn more than thirty, and they can be divided into classes, which makes it much more simple. 24. Is the verb escribir irregular? I notice you say escrito for the Past Participle "written." 25. That is the only irregularity in the verb escribir, the rest is conjugated like the verb vivir.

LESSON XXIV.

Irregular Verbs.

An Irregular Verb is one that is not conjugated like one of the three model verbs, hablar, aprender, and vivir, but where a slight deviation is made in the spelling of a verb merely in order to maintain its original pronunciation, such a verb is not considered irregular.

For example, many verbs ending in car change c into qu before e, thus: Tocar, to touch; toqué, I touched.

A number of those ending in **cer** and **cir** change the **c** into **z** before a and o, thus: Vencer, to vanquish; venzo, I vanquish. Resarcir, to indemnify; resarzo, I indemnify.

Those ending in gar take u after the g before e; thus, bagar, to pay; pague, I paid. Those ending in ger and gir change in the Present and Imperative: Escoger, to choose,

changes the g into j before a and o; thus, escojo, escoja. Dirigir, to direct; dirijo, dirija.

Distinguir, to distinguish, drops u before a and o: distingo, distinga.

The verbs terminating in eer, as creer, to believe, leer, to rea', poseer, to possess, and proveer, to provide, in those endings having an i, change the i into y when joined to another vowel, thus: crei, creyó; lei, leyeron; posei, posevere; provei, proveyéremos.

Averiguar, to ascerta n, assumes the diæresis before e and é accented, thus: averigüe, averigüé.

Argüir, to argue, loses the diæresis before terminations not having i or accented i, thus: arguyó, arguyes, arguye.

The above verbs are considered regular.

Seven Classes of Slightly Irregular Verbs.

FIRST CLASS.

Example: Acertar, to hit the mark or to guess.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Acierto, aciertas, acierta, acertamos, acertáis, aciertan.

IMPERATIVE.

Acierta, acierte, acertemos, acertad, acierten.

Subjunctive. PRESENT.

Acierte, aciertes, acierte, acertemos, acertéis, acierten.

odni a (All the other parts of this verb are regular.)

Alphabetical list of the most useful verbs conjugated o elike Acertar.

Alentar, to breathe apacentar, to graze aserrar, to saw pensar, to think

invernar, to winter merendar, to lunch apretar, to squeeze negar, to deny arrendar, to hire nevar, to snow atravesar, to cross
calentar, to warm
cerrar, to shut
comenzar, to commence
confesar, to confess
despertar, to awake
empezar, to begin
gobernar, to govern
helar, to freeze

quebrar, to break
recomendar, to recommend
regar, to water
reventar, to burst
sembrar, to sow
sosegar, to quiet
temblar, to tremble
tropezar, to stumble.

SECOND CLASS.

Example: Almorzar, to breakfast.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Almuerzo, almuerzas, almuerza, almorzamos, almorzáis, almuerzan.

IMPERATIVE.

Almuerza, almuerce, almorcemos, almorzad, almuercen.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Almuerce, almuerce, almorcemos, almorcéis, almuercen.

Alphabetical list of the most useful verbs conjugated like Almorzar.

Acordar, to agree apostar, to bet aprobar, to approve colar, to strain comprobar, to verify consolar, to console contar, to count costar, to cost demostrar, to demonstrate encontrar, to meet forzar, to force

mostrar, to show probar, to prove renovar, to renew reprobar, to reprove rogar, to entreat, to pray soltar, to loose, to untie sonar, to sound soñar, to dream tostar, to toast tronar, to fly.

THIRD CLASS.

Example: Volver, to return.

Past Participle. Vuelto, returned.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Vuelvo, vuelves, vuelve, volvemos, volvéis, vuelven.

IMPERATIVE.

Vuelve, vuelva volvamos, volved, vuelvan.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Vuelva, vuelvas, vuelva, volvamos, volvais, vuelvan.

Some verbs conjugated like Volver:

Absolver, to absolve cocer, to cook (c changed to co. Imperative, Cuezca, cozamos, cuezan, &c.) disolver, to dissolve llover, to rain moler, to grind morder, to bite

mover, to move oler, to smell (all the irreguzc before a and o. Cuez- lar forms take h before ue: huelo, hueles, huele, olemos, oleis, huelen) soler, to be used to, to be doler, to ache, to grieve accustomed to (defective) solver, to solve torcer, to twist retorcer, to twist again.

Well then, pués bien defective verb, verbo defectivo only used, solo se usa here, aquí frequently, frecuentemente to rain, llover and leader to it rains, llueve post, el correo for a walk, por un paseo to meet, encontrar postman, el cartero let us see, veremos impersonal, impersonal that is to say, es decir to lighten, relampague ir to drizzle, lloviznar to hail, granizar I see, veo

really, verdaderamente that's it, eso es to dawn, amanecer to grow dark, anochecer it is necessary, es preciso, es necesario, es menester to shut, cerrar window, la ventana it is cold, hace frio it is true, es verdad dining-room, el comedor it would be better, más valdría, seria meior since, desde very late, muy tarde better late than never, más vale tarde que nunca there is, there are, hay

Vocabulary, continued:—
market, el mercado
harvest, la cosecha
if there be any, si las hay
a week ago, hace una semana,
hace ocho dias, ocho dias hace

many thanks, muchas gracias, mil gracias clear, claro, a where (to where), a donde disagreeable, desagradable toothache, dolor de muelas headache, dolor de cabeza a cold, un resfriado long, mucho tiempo a few days, unos dias much better, mucho mejor.

EXERCISE XXIV.

I. Well, have you any difficulty with these three classes of verbs? 2. I have no difficulty in learning them, but I do not understand why the verb soler is defective. 3. It is defective because it is only used in the present and imperfect of the Indicative; the following are some examples. 4. I usually (or generally, or I am accustomed to) go out at nine when it is nice weather. 5. Formerly I used to visit Spain and Argentina every year, but lately I have gone to Cuba. 6. Here in London it frequently rains in June. 7. Do you usually rise early? Yes, I usually rise very early. 8. At what hour does the post generally arrive in the country? 9. At eight, and as I usually go early for a walk, I meet the postman. 10 Now I understand, but the verbs, to freeze, to snow, to thunder, and to rain, are difficult. II. Let us see. They are impersonal verbs, that is to say, they are only used in the third person singular; there are others, such as, to lighten, to drizzle, and to hail. 12. I see that those verbs are really irregular and defective. That's it. 13. To dawn and to grow dark are used in the three persons, singular and plural. I arrived in London at daybreak, 14. Last Saturday I arrived at Brighton at nightfall. 15. It is necessary to shut the window because it is cold. 16. It is true, but in the dining-room it is warm; it would be better to go there. 17. It is a week since I saw your friend and his family. 18. You have arrived very late, but they say, "better late than never." 19. There is much fruit in the market. It seems that the harvest was very good. 20. We shall eat pears if there be any. What fruit did you see in the market a week ago? 21. Well, then, is there nothing more you wish to ask about these verbs? Many thanks, it's all very clearly explained. 22 Is it raining? No, but it was raining this morning, and it rained last night, but I hope it will not rain tomorrow. 23. Where are you going to-morrow? To the country, and if it should rain it would be disagreeable. 24. Have you the toothache? No, I never had the toothache nor a headache, but I have a cold. 25. I am very sorry, have you had it long? I have had it a few days, but it is much better now, thanks.

LESSON XXV.

Irregular Verbs (cont.).

FOURTH CLASS.

Example: Entender, to understand.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT. Singular.

Plural.

Entiendo, I understand, &c.

entiendes entiende

entendemos, we understand entendéis

IMPERATIVE.

Entiende, understand

entendamos, let us underentended, understand [stand entienda, let himunderstand entiendan, let them under-

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

entiendas entienda

Stand

Entienda, I (may) under- | entendamos, we (may) unentendáis derstand entiendan

(Parts of the verb not mentioned above are regular.)

Principal verbs conjugated like Entender:

Ascender, to ascend atender, to attend condescender, to condescend hender, to split contender, to contend defender, to defend desatender, to neglect descender, to descend

encender, to light, to kindle extender, to extend perder, to lose tender, to expand, to extend verter, to bour out.

FIFTH CLASS.

Example: Sentir, to feel.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular. Siento, I feel sientes siente

Plural. sentimos, we feel sentis sienten.

(72)

PAST DEFINITE.

Sentí, *I felt* sentiste sintió

sentimos, we felt sentisteis sintieron.

IMPERATIVE.

Siente, feel sienta, let him feel

sintamos, let us feel sentid, feel sientan, let them feel.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Sienta, I (may) feel sientas

sientas sienta sintamos sintáis sientan.

IMPERFECT.

Sintiese, I might feel sintieses sintiese

sintiésemos sintieseis sintiesen.

FUTURE.

Sintiere, *I shall feel* sintieres sintiere

sintiéremos sintiereis sintieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Sintiera, I should feel sintieras sintiera

sintiéramos sintierais sintieran.

(Parts of the verb not given above are regular.)

Principal verbs conjugated like Sentir:

Adherir, to adhere advertir, to advert arrepentirse, to repent asentir, to assent conferir, to confer consentir, to consent controvertir, to convert deferir, to defer differ to differ

digerir, to digest
herir, to wound
hervir, to boil
invertir, to invert
pervertir, to pervert
preferir, to prefer
referir, to refer
requerir, to require
sugerir, to suggest
trasferir, to transfer.

SIXTH CLASS.

Example: Pedir, to ask.

Present Participle. Pidiendo.

INDICATIVE.

Present. Singular.

Pido, I ask pides pide

Plural.
pedimos
pedis
piden.

PAST DEFINITE.

Pedí, *I asked* pediste pidió

pedimos pedisteis pidieron.

IMPERATIVE.

Pide, ask pida, let him ask pidamos, let us ask pedid, ask pidan, let them ask.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Pida, I (may) ask pidas pida pidamos pidáis pidan.

IMPERFECT.

Pidiese, I might ask pidieses

pidiésemos pidieseis pidiesen.

FUTURE.

Pidiere, *I shall ask* pidieres

pidiéremos pidiereis pidieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Pidiera, *I should ask* pidieras pidiera

pidiéramos pidierais pidieran.

(Parts of the verb not given above are regular.)

Principal verbs conjugated like Pedir:--

Ceñir, to gird colegir, to infer

pidiese

pidiere

regir, to rule reñir, to quarrel competir, to compete concebir, to conceive derretir, to melt elegir, to elect medir, to measure repetir, to repeat seguir, to follow servir, to serve teñir, to dye vestir, to dress.

SEVENTH CLASS.

Example: Traducir, to translate.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular.

Traduzco, I translate

traduces traduce Plural. traducimos

traducis traducen.

PAST DEFINITE.

Traduje, *I translated* tradujiste tradujo

tradujimos tradujisteis tradujeron.

IMPERATIVE.

Traduce, translate traduzca, let him translate

traduzcamos, let us translate traducid, translate traduzcan, let them translate

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Traduzca, I (may) translate traduzcas traduzca

traduzcamos traduzcais traduzcan.

IMPERFECT.

Tradujese, *I might translate* tradujeses tradujese

tradujésemos tradujeseis tradujesen.

FUTURE.

Tradujere, *I shall translate* tradujeres tradujere

tradujéremos tradujereis tradujeren.

CONDITIONAL.

Tradujera, I should transtradujeras [late tradujera

rans- tradujéramos [late tradujerais tradujeran.

(Parts of the verb not given above are regular.)

Principal verbs conjugated like Traducir:-

Aducir, to adduce conducir, to conduct deducir, to deduce

introducir, to introduce producir, to produce reducir, to reduce.

VOCABULARY.

List, la lista to mention, mencionar. to translate, traducir except, excepto, salvo in which case, en cuyo caso that is the way, ese es el modo could you tell me, puede Vd. decirme to go, ir concerning, tocante I do not know, no sé balance sheet, el balance nor, ni book, el libro to think, pensar branch (house), la sucursal to cost, costar to form, formar company, limited, compañia anónima

to include, incluir enormous, enorme Brazil, el Brasil Portugal, Portugal Portuguese, portugues not much, no mucho over, más de word, la palabra language, la lengua, el idioma goods, las mercaderias amount, el importe, el monto always, siempre opportunity, la oportunidad making money, ganar dinero study the map, estudie el mapa without any limit, sin limite a firm, una casa every year, cada año more and more, más y más to make a fortune, hacer fortuna.

· EXERCISE XXV.

I. I see that in these lists the verb "to know" (conocer) is not mentioned. Is it conjugated like traducir? 2. It is conjugated like traducir, except in the Past Definite, in which tense it is regular. 3. I suppose, then, it is conjugated thus: conoci, conociste, conocio, conocimos, conocisteis, conocieron.

4. That is the way, as it is regular in that tense. 5. Could you tell me how the verb doler (to ache or to pain) is used? 6. It is used in the same way as gustar (to like), for example: Have you a headache? Does your head ache? 7. The verb doler is conjugated like those of the third class, see volver. 8. The verb sentir has many meanings, for example: I am sorry I am late. I regret I cannot go. I feel well. 9. Concerning that business we spoke about the other

day, do you think it is a good business? 10. I do not know, I have not seen the balance-sheet nor the books. II. Is it true that you are thinking of opening a branch in each of the capitals of the Spanish-speaking nations? 12. Yes, but it will cost so much that I think it would be better to form a company. 13. How many Spanish-speaking countries are there? Eighteen, and if you include the Republic of Panama, there are nineteen. 14. Are they large countries? Some are enormous, and others are small. 15. In Spanish-speaking countries do you include Portugal and Brazil? 16. No, because in those two countries they speak Portuguese. 17. Is there much difference between Spanish and Portuguese? 18. Not much, the fact is that there are over one thousand Spanish words in the Portuguese language. 19. Is there much business between England and the Spanish-speaking countries? 20. They buy from England over £50,000,000 worth of goods every year. 21. Are there opportunities in those countries of making money? 22. Study the map, and you will understand that the opportunities are without any limit. 23. Are there any English firms in those countries? Many, and every year more and more. 24. Could I make a fortune in those countries without speaking Spanish? 25. The same kind of fortune that you could make in England without speaking English.

LESSON XXVI.

Irregular Verbs (cont.).

VERBS ALMOST ENTIRELY IRREGULAR.

[The irregularities are in heavy type.]

ANDAR, to walk, to go.

Present Participle. Andando, walking.
Past Participle. Andado, walked.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular.
Ando, *I walk*, go
andas
anda

Plura andamos andáis andáis

ande (clostical), let him make

IMPERFECT.

Andaba, I walked, went, was andábamos andabas [walking, going andabais andaba.

PAST DEFINITE.

Anduve, I walked, went anduvimos anduviste anduvisteis anduvo anduvieron.

FUTURE.

Andaré, *I shall walk*, *go* andarémos andarás andará andarán.

CONDITIONAL.

Andaría, I should walk, go andaríamos andarías andaría andarían.

IMPERATIVE.

Anda (tu), walk, go [go andad ande (élor Vd.), let him walk, anden.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Ande, I (may) walk, go andemos andéis ande anden.

IMPERFECT.

Anduviese, Imightwalk, go anduviésemos anduvieses anduviese anduviesen.

FUTURE.

Anduviere, I shall walk, go anduviéremos anduvieres anduviere anduvieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Anduviera, I should walk, anduvieramos anduvieras [go anduvierais anduviera.

DAR, to give.

IR, to go.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Dando, giving. Yendo, going.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Dado, given.

Ido, gone.

INDICATIVE.

da dan

SENT. Singular. Plural. Singular. Plural.

Doy, I give damos Voy, I go vamos das dais vas vais vais vas va van.

IMPERFECT.

Daba, I gave, dábamos Iba, I went, was was giving dabas dabais ibas daban. ibas

ibamos going

ibais iban.

PAST DEFINITE.

Dí, I gave dimos Fui, I went fuimos diste disteis fuiste fuiste dié dieron. fueron.

FUTURE.

darás [give daréis dará darán.

Daré, I shall daremos Iré, I shall go iremos irás iréis irá irán.

CONDITIONAL.

Daría, I should daríamos Iría, I should go iríamos darías [give daríais irías darían. daría

iría

iríais irían.

IMPERATIVE.

demos, let us

vayamos,

Da (tu), give dad, give dé (el or Vd.), den, let them give give.

| Vé (tu), go id, go vaya, let him go let them go.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Dé, that I (may) demos des [give deis dé den

Vaya, that I (may) vayamos vayas [go vayáis vaya vayan.

FUTURE. Diere, I shall diéremos Fuere, I shall fuéremos dieres [give diereis fueres [go fuereis fuéremos dieren. fueren. diere fuere CONDITIONAL. Diera, that I diéramos Fuera, that I fuéramos dieras [should dierais diera [should go fuerais fuera fueran.]

SABER, to know. HACER, to do, to make.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Daba, I gove debanos . The I west were thance

Sabiendo, knowing.

Haciendo, doing, making

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Sabido, known. Hecho, done, made.

.moreur		INDICATIVE.	notati	
		PRESENT.		
Sé, I know	sabemos	Hago,	I do,	hacemos
sabes	sabéis	haces	[make	hacéis
sabe	saben.	hace	nhash	hacen.
, and		IMPERFECT.	dines.	
Sabía, I knew		Hacía,	I did,	hacíamos
(was knowing	nonLago	wasd	oing &c.	
sabías	sabíais	hacías		hacíais
cahia	sahian	hacía		hacían

	Past I	DEFINITE.	
Supe, I knew	supimos	Hice, I did,	hicimos
supiste	supisteis	hiciste [made	hicisteis
supo eque	supieron.	hizo	hicieron.
ld so	Fu	rure.	
Sabré, I shall	sabremos	Haré, I shall	haremos
know	on man su	do, make	
sabrás	sabréis	ha rás	haréis
sabrá	sabrán.	ha rá	harán.

sabrás sabrá	sab r éis sab r án.	3 713 05	ha rás ha rá		ha réis ha rán.
		CONDIT	IONAL.		
	hould sabríamos	3		I should	haríamos
E MAL	know			do, make	
sabrías -	sabríais	COLUMN	harías		haríais
sabría	sabrían.	1.4.14	haría	11	harían.

hiciésemos

hiciesen.

IMPERATIVE.

Plural. Singular. Plural. Singular. hagamos, let us sepamos, let us do. make know sabed, know

Haz, do, make haced, do, make Sabe, know hagan, let them sepan, let them haga, let him sepa, let him do. make do, make know. know

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

hiciéramos Haga, that I Sepa, that I sepamos hagas [(may) do, hicierais [(may) sepáis sepas hicieran. haga make sepa [know sepan.

IMPERFECT. Hiciese, I might Supiese, I might supiésemos hicieses [do, &c. hicieseis

supieses [know supieseis supiese subjesen.

hic ese FUTURE.

Hiciere, I shall hiciéremos Supiere, I shall supiéremos hiciéreis hicieres [do, &c. supieres [know supiereis hiciéren. hiciere supieren. supiere

CONDITIONAL.

Supiera, that I supieramos Hiciera, that I hagam s supieras [should supierais hicieras [should hagáis [do, &c. hagan. hiciera supiera [know supieran.

VOCABULARY.

To progress, progresar irregular, irregular irregularity, irregularidad clearly, claramente indicate, indicar send, enviar, mandar bouquet, el ramillete to take, tomar to invite, invitar far. lejos mile, la milla motor, el automóvil to leave, partir, salir Rome, Roma short, corto long, largo London, Londres day-break, el amanecer night-fall, el anochecer Spanish Grammar S .- T.

ideal, ideal spring, la primavera summer, el verano autumn, el otoño winter, el invierno about the end, a fines de to cross, cruzar to find, hallar, encontrar New York, Nueva York to escape, escapar tropical, tropical thermometer, el termómetro degrees, los grados difference, la diferencia Centigrade, Centigrado water, el agua freezes. hiela return, volver, regresar thinking, pensando

coast, la costa
South America, Sud América
Ecuador, el Ecuador
continent, el continente
very much, muchisimo
interesting, interesante
part, la parte

the present, lo presente, lo actual a present, un regalo that part, esa parte world, el mundo illustrated, ilustrado photograph, la fotografia past, pasado.

EXERCISE XXVI.

I. How do you progress with the irregular verbs? 2. I do not find them difficult, and I like to see the irregularities so clearly indicated. 3. Who has sent you this bouquet that has just arrived? 4. A friend (m.) who has taken a house in the country. 5. Are you going to see him? Yes, he has invited me to stay two weeks at his country house. 6. Is it far? Only twenty-five miles from the city. I shall go in a motor, because I like it so much more than the train. 7. I have just met your friend from Havana, he told me that he leaves for Rome next week. 8. I suppose you have short days in winter and long in summer in Havana as in London? 9. In Havana day breaks and night falls at the same hours every day in the year. 10. I should like to live there, because it seems to be an ideal place. II. Oh, yes, in the months of winter and spring. but in summer, in June, July, August, and September, the heat is terrible. 12. I usually left Havana about the end of May, and crossed over to Tampa in Florida, and then went by train to New York. 13. But New York is very hot in summer. Yes, so I found it, and in July went on to Saratoga, and then to Canada, and thus escaped the heat. 14. It seems (that) you do not like the heat? I like warm weather, but not tropical. 15. What do you call tropical? When the thermometer marks anything over 85 degrees Fahr. 16. You say Fahrenheit, what is the difference between Fahrenheit and Centigrade? 17. Well, by the Fahrenheit thermometer water freezes at 32 degrees, by the Centigrade thermometer at o°. 18. Has your brother-in-law returned from Mexico? No. he is not thinking of returning this year. 19. He is making a voyage down the coast of South America, and has visited Ecuador and Peru, and is now at Valparaiso. 20. Do you like travelling in that continent? Very much, it is the most interesting part of the world. 21. Its present civilization and its past history are of very great interest. 22. Have you travelled much in that part of the world? Yes, I spent five years there, and am writing a book of my experiences; it will be illustrated by the many photographs I was able to take.

LESSON XXVII.

Irregular Verbs (continued).

PODER, to be able.

DECIR, to say, to tell.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Pudiendo, being able.

Diciendo, saying, telling.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

diareit

Podido, been able. Dicho, said, told.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT

	PRESE	ENT.	
Singular. Puedo, I am able, can	Plural. podemos, we are able, can podéis	Singular. Digo, I say, tell dices	Plural. decimos, we say, tell decís
puedes puede	pueden.	dice	dicen.
pucae	pacter.	dicc	dicon.
	IMPERI		
Podía, I was	podíamos	Decía, I said,	decíamos
able, could	ARRIVATE STUSIES		diological designation of the second
podías	podíais	decías [ing, &c. decía	decíais decían.
podía	podían.	uecia	deciali.
	PAST DE	FINITE.	A DESCRIPTION OF THE PROPERTY
Pude, I was able, could		told	
pudiste	p u disteis	dijiste	d ij istei s
pudo	pudieron.	dijo	dijeron.
	Fur	JRE.	
Podré, I shall be	podremos	Diré, I shallsay,	diremos
podrás [able		dirás [tell	diréis
podrá	podrán.	dirá	dirán.
and the same	CONDIT	TONAT	
Podría, I should		Dirí, I should	diríamos
beable		say, tell	
podrías	podríais	dirías	diríais
podría	podrían.	diría	dirían.
sterrands	aspaup	3161030	201010
	IMPER		43040
	podamos,		digamos, let
Dund- i. i.	let us be able		us say, tell
Puede, be able	poded, be able	Di (tu), say, tell	decid, say, tell
be able	puedan, let them be able.		digan, let them
ve avie	ve uvie.	say, tell	say, tell.

(83)

G 2

SUBJUNCTIVE.

P	R	F	S	F	N	T	

Singular. Plural.

Pueda, (that, if) podamos Diga. (that, if) I digamos
I be able, oan

puedas podais digas digas
pueda puedan.

IMPERFECT.

Pudiese, I might be able, could

pudieses pudieseis pudiesen.

Dijese, I might dijesemos

say, tell

dijeseis dijeses dijesen.

FUTURE.

Pudiere, (that) I pudiéremos Dijere, (that) I dijéremos might be able pudieres pudieres pudieren. Dijere, (that) I dijéremos might say, tell dijeres dijeres dijeren.

CONDITIONAL.

Pudiera, (that) I pudiéramos should be able pudieras pudieran pudieran.

Dijera, (that) I dijéramos should say, tell dijeras dijeras dijeran.

CABER, to be contained. QUERER, to wish, to like, &c.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE

Cabiendo, holding, containing. Queriendo, wishing.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Cabido, held, contained. Querido, wished.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Quepo, I am con-
cabescabemosQuiero, I wish,
quiresqueremoscabes[tained cabeis cabequires quires[like quereis quiren.

IMPERFECT.

Cabía, I was
being containedcabíamosQuería, I wished,
was wishingqueríamoscabíascabíaisqueríasqueríaiscabíacabían.queríaquerían.

PAST DEFINITE.

Cupe, I was con-
cupistecupistesQuise, I wished,
quisistequisimoscupiste[tained
cupieron.quisiste[liked
quisisteis
quisieron.

FUTURE

	10.		
Turkey	cabremos	Querré, I shall	querremos
be contained cabrás	cabréis	wish quer rás	querréis
cabrá	cabrán.	querrá	querran.

	CON	DITIONAL.	1.0
Cabria, I should be contained	cabriamos	Querría, I should wish, like	quer ríamos
cabrías cabría	cab ríais cab rían.	querrías querría	querríais querrían.

IMPERATIVE.

	quepamos,		queramos,
[tained	let us hold	Quiere, wish	let us wish
Cabe, be con- quepa, let him be contained	cabed, hold quepan, let them hold.	quiera, let him wish	quered, wish quieran, let them wish.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

		1	
Quepa, (if, that)	quepamos	Quiera, (if, that)	queramos
I may be con-		I may wish	LEG R. Labins go
quepas [tained	quepais	quieras	queráis
quepa	quepan.	qu i era	quieran.
		IMPERFECT.	the many arrest
Cupiese, I might	cupiésemos	Qu is iese,	qu is iésemos

Cupiese, I might	cupiésemos	Qu is iese,	qu is iés emos
be contained		I might wish	
cupieses	cupieseis	qu is ieses	qu is ieseis
cupiese	cupiesen.	qu is iese	qu is iesen.

	FUTURE.	
Cupiere, I might cupiéremos	Quisiere, Imight	quisiéremos
cupieres [be con- cupiereis	quisieres [wish	quisiereis
cliniere Stained cunieren	quisiere	quisieren

Condi	TIONAL.	
Cupiera, I should cup éramos	Quisiera, I should	quisiéramos
cupieras [be con- cupierais	quisieras [wish	quisierais
cupiera [tained cupieran.	quisiera	quisieran.

JUGAR, to play. DORMIR, to sleep.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Jugando, playing.	Durmiendo, sleeping
PAST	PARTICIPLE.
Jugado, played.	Dormido, slept.

INDICATIVE.

PR	ES	EN	T.	

		IKES	DITI.	
Si-gular.	Plural.		Singular.	Plural.
	jugamos		Duermo, I sleep,	dormimos
am playing	3 0		am sleeping	
juegas "	jugáis	.47474	duermes	dormís
ju e ga	juegan.	VANOT	duerme	duermen.
Juega	Juoguii.			
COLUMN TARREST		TMDED	FECT V	

ju e ga	ju e gan.	duerme	quermen.
zomejtiano l	IMP	ERFECT.	drone, and
Jugaba, I played, was playing		Dormía, I slept. was sleeping	dormíamos
jugabas jugaba	jugabais jugaban.	dormías dormía	dormíais dormían.
	Past :	DEFINITE.	
Jugué, I played	jugamos	Dormí, I slept	dormimos

dormiste durmió

dormisteis

jugaste	jugasteis	dormiste	durmieron.
jugó	jugaron.	d u rmió	
A Comment	Fur	URE.	
Jugaré, I shall	jugaremos	Dormiré, I shall	dormiremos
jugarás [play	jugaréis	dormirás [sleep	dormiréis
jugará	jugarán.	dormirá	dormirán.

CONDITIONAL

Jugaría, I should		Dormiría, I should sleep	dormiríamos
jugarías	jugaríais	dormirías	dormiríais
jugaría	jugarían.	dormiría	dormirían.

IMPERATIVE.

alveosible o	juguemos, let us	e di granqui i	durmamos, let us sleep
Juega, play juegue, let him play	jugad, play jueguen,	Duerme, sleep duerma, let him sleep	dormid, sleep duerman, let them sleep.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

	PRES	ENI.	
Juegue, (if, that) I may play		Duerma, (if, that) I may sleep	durmamos
juegues juegue	jug u éis ju e g u en.	duermas duerma	durmáis duerman.

Juegue	Juog aon.		
Jugase, jugases jugase	I might jugásemos play jugaseis jugasen.	Imperfect. Durmiése, I might sleep durmieses durmiese	durmiésemos durmieseis durmiesen.
	* 3,000	FUTURE.	1

	FUTURE.	
Jugare, I might jugáremos	Durmiére I might sleep	d u rmiéremos
jugares jugareis jugaren.	durmiereis durmiere	durmiereis durmieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Singular. Plural. Jugara, I should jugáramos

play

jugaras jugara jugarais jugaran. Singular.
Durmiéra,
I should sleep

durmieras durmiera

side, el lado

Plural, durmiéramos

durmierais durmieran.

VOCABULARY.

Returned, regresado expecting, esperando sense, el juicio leave it, dejarlo system, el sistema people, gente best, el mejor client, el cliente keep on, to, seguir until, hasta nothing, nada to travel, viajar principal, principal England, Inglaterra to depend, depender extravagant, extravagante first class, por primera clase to make a mistake, equivocarse employment, el empleo not very often, no muy a menudo except, salvo, excepto games, los juegos musical instrument, el instrumento de música guitar, la guitara organ, el órgano cards, los naipes, las cartas not as well, no tan bien tennis, el tenis cricket, el criket reason, la vazón window, la ventana trunk, el baul a great deal, mucho persons, las personas lecture-hall, reading-room, el salón de lectura is there room for, cabe this hall holds, caben en éste salón

someone told me, alguien me dijo the simplest way, el modo más simple (sencillo) to omit, omitiv at first, al principio to present, presentar the regular tenses, los tiempos result, el resultado regulares troublesome, molesto pupil, el, la. discipulo, a not enough, no basta, no es bastante you are right, Vd. tiene razón you are wrong, Vd. no ti ne razón easier, más fácil to teach, enseñar to simplify, simplificar have the goodness, tenga Vd. la to accept, aceptar [bondad my apology, mis excusas to promise, prometer promised, prometí busy, ocupado matter, el acunto to arrange, arreglar to enclose, incluir a first of exchange, una primera de cambio a reply, una contestación I have just, acabo de the daily paper, el diario steamer, el vapor strange, estraño delayed, detenido bad weather, el mal tiempo paragraph, el párafo holds a great deal, cabe mucho holds us all, cabemos todos.

EXERCISE XXVII.

I. Has Miss X. returned from Monte Carlo? She arrived here this morning, and I am expecting her now. 2. Did she make

much at Monte Carlo? No, I believe she lost about froo, and then had the sense to leave it. 3. I believe some people (persons) have a system by which they think they can win? Oh yes, many, and those people (persons) are the best clients because they keep on playing until they have nothing. 4. Have you travelled much? Yes, miss, I have been in the principal cities of Spain, France, Italy, the United States of North America, Mexico, Argentina, Chile, Cuba, and England. I have lived in London and Liverpool. 5. It must have cost a good deal to travel so much. It depends on how one travels, and how one lives. If one lives extravagantly at home or travels first-class I do not think it makes much difference. 6. Do you make mistakes in the employment of the verbs? Not very often, except in the case of the verb jugar, to play; I never know when to employ that verb or the verb tocar, to touch. 7. It is very easy; we use the verb jugar when we refer to games, and tocar when we speak of musical instruments. 8. Do you play the piano? No, I play the guitar, but my sister plays the piano, and my cousin (f.) plays the organ. 9. Do you play cards? No, Madam, I play tennis and cricket. 10. Do you sleep well in the city? Not as well as in the country; that is one reason why I prefer to live in the country. II. Do you sleep with the window open or closed? In winter almost everyone sleeps with the windows closed and in summer open. 12. Is there room for (cabe) more in your trunk? Yes, for something small, but I do not wish to fill it too full. I know that trunk holds a great deal. 13. How many persons does this hall hold—can be contained by (caben) this hall? At least 500 persons, but the hall at the other side of the street holds 1,000 persons. 14. This room could not hold us all. No, but my friend found one this morning, which he told me was a reading-room (or lecture hall), and will hold us all. 15. I see that you understand the verb caber, to hold or to contain. I found it rather difficult at first, but now it is easy. 16. The verb querer means so many things,—to wish for (want), to like, to love; it must be a very useful verb. It is. 17. Someone told me that the Spanish verbs are difficult, but I have found them very easy. Yes, in this Grammar they are presented in the simplest way possible. 18. Yes, most grammars omit the regular tenses, with the result that at times it is very troublesome for the pupil to know how to form the other tenses; it is not enough to say they are regular. 19. The great thing in teaching is to simplify. You are right; it makes everything easier to learn, and much more interesting. 20. Have the goodness to accept my apology for not coming last week as I had promised; I was very busy. 21. Certainly, I know very well that you have a very important matter to arrange. 22. In the

letter which I sent to my friend in Havana I enclosed a first of exchange for £100, and I have not yet received a reply. 23. I have just read in the paper this morning that the steamer was delayed by the bad weather, and only arrived at Havana yesterday, so it is not strange that you have had no news. 24. Now I understand how it is that I have not received news from him. In what paper did you see that news? In this one; here it is, do you see this paragraph? Oh, yes, thanks.

LESSON XXVIII.

Irregular Verbs (cont).

PONER, to put.

OIR, to hear.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Poniendo, putting.

Oyendo, hearing.

oiríais

oirían.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Puesto, put.

pondrías pondríais

pondría

pondrían.

Oído, heard.

INDICATIVE.

P	RE	SE	NT	
---	----	----	----	--

	I KESI	ENI.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
Pongo, I put	ponemos, we put	Oigo, I hear	oimos, we hear
pones	ponéis	oyes	oís
pone ' '	ponen.	oye	oyen.
	Impere	ECT.	
Ponía. I put, was		Oía, I heard, was	oíam os
ponías butting			oíais
ponía		oía	oían.
	Past De		NAME OF TAXABLE
	pusimos	Oi, I heard	oímos
pusiste	pusisteis	oiste	oísteis
p uso	pusieron.	oyó	oyeron.
2 2 4 W TEN	Futu	THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF THE	
Pondré, I shall		Oiré, I shall	oiremos
pondrás [but	pondréis	oirás [hear	oiréis
pondrá		oirá	oirán.
	* ***		
	Conditi		
Pondria,	pondríamos	Oiría, I should	oiríamos
I should but		hear	

oirías

oiría

IMPERATIVE.

INII EKMIIVE.					
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.		
Pon, put ponga, let him put	pongamos, let us poned, put [put pongan, let them put.		oigamos, let us oid, hear [hear oigan, let them hear.		

ponga, let him	pongan, let them but.	oiga, let him	
Calabia and	mon ment les		
	SUBJUN	CTIVE.	
	Presi	ENT.	
	pongáis	Oiga, I (may) oigas [hear	
ponga	pongan.	oiga	oigan.
	IMPERI	FECT.	
P us iese, I (might) put	p us iésemos	Oyese, I (might)	oyésemos
p us ieses		oyeses	oyeseis
p us iese	p us iesen.	oyese	oyesen.
	Futu	RE.	
Pusiere, I shall	p us iéremos	Oyere, I shall	oyéremos
	p us iereis	oyeres [hear	oyereis
pusiere	pusieren.	oyere	oyeren.
	CONDIT	IONAL.	
Pusiera, I should		Oyera, I should	oyéramos
pusieras [put	pusierais	oyeras [hear	oyerais
pusiera	pusieran.	oyera	oyeran.

ages a country of the ball on the company of their

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

TRAER, to bring, to carry. SALIR, to go out.

Trayendo, bringing.

Saliendo, going out.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Traido, brought.

Salido, gone out.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Traigo, I bring	traemos	Salgo, I go out	salimos
traes	traéis	sales	salís
trae	traen.	sale	salen.

IMPERFECT.

Traia, I brought,	traiamos	Salía, I went out,	salíamo
was bringing		was going out	
traías	trafais	salías	salíais
trafa	traian.	salía	salían.

PAST DEFINITE

	1 1101	DEFINITE.	
Singular.	Plural.	Singular.	Plural.
Traje, I brought	trajimos	Salí, I went out	salimos
trajiste	trajisteis	saliste	salisteis
tra jo	trajeron.	salió	salieron.

FUTURE.

Traeré,	I shall	traeremos	Saldré	, I shall	saldremos
traerás	[bring	traeréis	saldrás	[goout	saldréis
traerá	是是是 實	traerán.	saldrá		sal d rán.

CONDITIONAL.

Traería, I should		Saldría, I should	
traerías [bring		saldrías [goout	
traería	traerían.	sal d ría	sal d rían.

IMPERATIVE.

traigamos, let us bring Trae, bring traed, bring traiga, let him traigan, let them bring bring	Sal, go out salga, let him go out	salgamos, let us go out salid, go out salgan, let them go out.
--	---	--

SUBJUNCTIVE.

	I MEDDINI.		
Traiga, I may traig	amos Salga,	I may go	salgamos
traigas [bring traig		[out	salgáis
traiga traig	gan. salga		salgan.

IMPERFECT.

Trajese, I	might trajésemos	Saliese, I might	saliésemos
trajeses	[bring trajeseis	salieses [go out	saliseis
trajese	trajesen.	saliese	saliesen.

FUTURE.

Trajere, I shall	l trajéremos	Saliere, I	shall	saliéremos
trajeres [brin	g tra j ereis	salieres	[go out	saliereis
trajere	trajeren.	saliere		salieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Trajera, I should	trajéramos	Saliera,	Ishould	saliéramos
trajeras [bring	trajerais	salieras	[go out	
trajera	trajeran.	saliera		salieran.

VOCABULARY.

To believe, creer
to conjugate, conjugar
to suppose, suponer
to oppose, oponer
to compose, componer
to place before, anteponer
just like, justamente como
not to listen, desoir

to hear again, reoir similar, semejantes to attract, atraer to contract, contraer to distract, distraer to use, usar to excel, sobresalir wonderful, maravilloso VOCABULARY, continued:-

memory, la memoria novel, la novela half-an-hour, media hora about, cerca de theatre, el teatro concert, el concierto famous, famoso pianist, pianista, m. & f. opera, la ópera not yet, no aún, no todavía season, estación musical season, temporada in town, en la ciudad [lírica busy, ocupado uncertain, incierto safe, seguro safer, más seguro by land, por tierra by sea, por mar active, activo never, nunca, jamás brain, el cerebro it seems to me, me parece inclined, inclinado to enjoy, gozar health, la salud depends, depende person, la persona lazy, holgazan naturally, naturalmente

exception, excepción almost all, casi todo rule, la regla speaking, hablando observation, la observación painting, la pintura attractive, atractivo of course, por supuesto to become proficient, para hacerse proficiente requires, requiere attained, alcanzado certain, cierto pleasure, el placer than any other, que cualquier otro million, el millón obtain, obtener proficiency, proficiencia admit, admitir not even, ni aun subject, el sujeto the majority, la mayoria the people, la gente students, los estudiantes complicated, complicado properly, propiamente simplified, simplificado applies, aplica branches of study, ramos de

EXERCISE XXVIII.

I. Do you know the verbs to put, to hear, to bring, and to go out?

2. Yes, Sir, I think I know them, but how should I conjugate to suppose, to oppose, to compose, and other verbs such as to place before?

3. Just like the verb poner, to put. Ah, I understand now; well, that makes them all very easy. 4. Are there other verbs conjugated like the verb to hear? Yes, desoir, not to listen, reoir, to hear again, and similar verbs.

5. There are some verbs conjugated like to bring, such as to attract, to contract, to distract, and a few others not much used.

6. There is an important verb conjugated like salir, to go out; what is it? I do not know.

7. It is the verb to excel. Do you excel in learning languages?

8. I do not excel as much as my brother; he has learned seven, and is now learning the eighth; he has a wonderful memory.

9. Did you bring this book to-day? No, I brought it last week, but my sister brought a new novel this morning; she bought it vesterday.

10. Are you going out to-day? Yes, in about half-an-hour, and I shall return about ten o'clock to-night. II. Are you going to the theatre? No, madam, I am going to a concert to hear a famous pianist. 12. Have you ever been to the opera? Not yet, but I hope to go next season, if I am in town. 13. Are you going to the country this summer? I hope to be able to go for some three or four weeks if I am not too busy. 14. Do you like to travel by land or by sea? By sea if there is fine weather, but as it is so uncertain I think it safer to travel by land. 15. Have you ever seen a more active man than that friend of yours who has just gone out? Never, he has a marvellously active brain. 16. It seems to me that the more one does the more one can do, and the less one does the less one feels inclined to do. 17. You are right; besides, in order to enjoy health we must be active. Well, I should say that that depends on the person, because I know some persons who are very lazy and enjoy good health. 18. Naturally there are exceptions to almost all rules. I was only speaking from my own observations. 19. What study do you like best? Music and painting. I think these two are the most attractive of all studies; of course, to become proficient requires time, money, and patience. 20. I think that when once one has attained a certain proficiency in these studies they give more pleasure than any other. 21. I believe you are right, but of the millions who take up these subjects how many obtain proficiency? Well, I must admit, not many, not even ten per cent. 22. Of these two subjects, I should say that music is the most difficult, but yet the majority of the people study it. 23. The difficulty is that to most students it appears a very complicated subject, and many find it too difficult to continue. That is because its study has never been properly simplified. 24. And this applies to almost all branches of study; they could all be greatly simplified and made attractive.

LESSON XXIX.

Irregular Verbs (cont.).

VALER, to be worth.

VENIR, to come.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Valiendo, being worth.

Viniendo, coming.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Valido, been worth. Venido, come.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular. Plural. Valgo, I am valemos Singular. Vengo, I come venimos vienes vales [worth valéis venís viene vienen. valen. vale Valía, I was valíamos Venía, I came, (being) worth was coming veníamos valías valíais venías veníais valia valian. venía venían. PAST DEFINITE. Vali, I was worth valimos Vine, I came vinimos valiste valisteis viniste vinisteis valieron. vino vinieron. valió

FUTURE.

Vendré, *I shall* vendremos vendrás [come vendréis vendrá vendran. Valdré, I shall be valdremos valdrás [worth valdréis val**d**rán. valdrá

CONDITIONAL.

Valdría, I should valdríamos Vendría, I should vendríamos valdrías [come vendríais vendría vendríais vendría vendrían.

IMPERATIVE.

vengamos. valgamos. let us be worth let us come Vale, be worth valed, be worth Ven, come venid, come valga, let him be valgan, let them venga, let him vengan, let be worth. come them come. worth

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Valga, I may be valgamos Venga, I may vengamos valgas [worth valgáis vengas [come vengáis valgan. venga IMPERFECT. Valiese, I might valiésemos Viniese, I might viniésemos come be worth valieseis valiesen. vinieseis vinieses viniese viniesen. valiese FUTURE. Valiere, I shall valiéremos Viniere, I shall viniéremos come be worth vinieres viniereis valiereis viniere vinieren, valieren. valiere

CONDITIONAL.

Viniera, Ishould viniéramos Valiera, I should valiéramos come he worth valierais vinieras vinierais valieras viniera vinieran. valieran. valiera

laugh

VER, to see.

REIR. to laugh.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

Viendo, seeing.

Riendo, laughing.

PAST PARTICIPLE.

Visto, seen.

Reido, laughed.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

Singular. Plural. Plural. Singular. reimos Veo, I see vemos Río, I laugh ríes veis reís ves ven. rie rien. ve

IMPERFECT.

Veia, I saw, was veiamos Reia, I laughed, reiamos was laughing veíais veían. seeing veías reías refais veía reía. refan.

PAST DEFINITE.

Vi, I saw vimos Rei, I laughed reimos viste visteis reiste reisteis rleron.

FUTURE.

Veré, I shall see veremos Reiré, I shall reiremos verás veréis verá verán. reirás [laugh reiréis reirá. reirán.

CONDITIONAL.

Vería, I should veríamos Reiría, I should reiríamos verías [see veríais reirías [laugh reiríais verías [see veríais reiría verían. vería reirían.

IMPERATIVE.

veamos, let us see riamos, let us

Ve, see ved, see Rie, laugh reid, laugh voa, let him see voan, let them ria, let him rian, let them laugh see. laugh.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

Vea, I may see veamos Ria, I may laugh riamos veais rias riais vean, ria rian. veas vea

IMPERFECT.

Plural. Singular Plural. Singular. Riese, I might riésemos Viese, I might viésemos rieses laugh rieseis vieses see vieseis viese viesen. riese riesen.

FUTURE.

 Viere, I shall see viéremos
 Riere, I shall
 riéremos

 vieres
 viereis
 rieres
 [laugh riereis

 viere
 vieren.
 riere
 rieren.

CONDITIONAL.

Viera, I should viéramos Riera, I should riéramos vieras [see vierais rieras [laugh rierais rieran.

VOCABULARY.

To be of equal value, equivaler to prevail, prevaler to contravene, contravenir to agree, convenir to intervene, intervenir to caution, prevenir to happen, sobrevenir to foresee, antever to note, notar, fijar reflexive, reflexivo I shall try, trataré to rejoice, alegrarse to wash oneself, lavarse both, ambos I wash myself, me lavo I washed myself, me lavaba; (Past Definite, me lavé) rejoice thou, alegrate! let him rejoice, alegrese let us rejoice, alegrémonos let them rejoice, alegrense please, sirvase to translate, traducir soon, pronto compound tenses, tiempos compuestos perfectly, perfectamente to mention, mencionar to dare or venture, atreverse to go to bed, acostarse to mock, burlarse to become angry, enfadarse

to get up, levantarse

to complain, quejarse to take a seat, sentarse to marry, casarse to wonder, maravillarse to burn, quemar, quemarse to be silent, callarse to become dry, secarse pass on, pasar a subject, el sujeto are there, is there, hay to leave, dejar next, próximo, próxima lesson, la lección this afternoon or evening, esta tarde to go for a walk, dar un paseo club, el club the night before last, ante anoche very likely, muy probable a box (at theatre), un palco to invite, invitar, convidar a few friends, unos amigos the performance, la función very much, muchisimo early, temprano late, tarde hardly, apenas enough, bastante each person, cada persona rest, descanso to suffer, sufrir I already know, ya sé rather, algo.

EXERCISE XXIX.

I. Could you tell me what verbs are conjugated like valer? I think so; "to be of equal value," equivaler, and "to prevail," trevaler. 2. There are a few conjugated like venir, such as, to contravene, to agree, to intervene, to caution, to happen. 3. To foresee is conjugated like to see. Note the irregularities of these verbs, and then you will have no difficulty. 4. Can you conjugate a verb in the reflexive form? I will try; alegrarse, to rejoice, I rejoice, thou rejoicest, he rejoices, we rejoice, you or ye rejoice, they rejoice. 5. What would be the imperfect of, to wash oneself? I washed (was washing) myself, &c., and the past definite is I washed myself, &c. 6. What is the future? I shall wash myself, thou will wash thyself, he will wash himself, we shall wash ourselves, &c. 7. What is the imperative of both verbs? Wash thyself (yourself), let him wash himself, or wash yourself, let us wash ourselves, wash yourselves, let them wash themselves, or wash yourselves. 8. Rejoice (thou)! Let him rejoice, or rejoice yourself, let us rejoice, rejoice yourselves, let them rejoice. 9. What are the present and imperfect subjunctive of to wash oneself? That I wash or may wash myself; and the imperfect is: that or if I washed (might wash), myself. 10. What is the future and conditional of the subjunctive? The future is, that or if I shall wash myself, and the conditional is, that or if I should wash myself. II. Please translate this: wash yourself; do not wash yourself; let us wash ourselves; do not let us wash ourselves. 12. Do not let us make a mistake. Note these verbs and you will soon learn them. 13. Do you know the compound tenses? Perfectly: I have rejoiced; I had rejoiced (habia); I had rejoiced (hube); I shall have rejoiced; I should have rejoiced. 14. And the subjunctive? That I have rejoiced; that I had rejoiced: that I shall have rejoiced; that I should have rejoiced. 15. Mention some of the reflexive verbs. To dare or venture; to go to bed or lie down; to mock or laugh at, to become angiy, to get up or rise, to complain, to take a seat, to marry, to wonder, to burn, to be silent, to become dry. 16. It appears to me that we can now pass on to other subjects. I understand the verbs perfectly. 17. What other subjects are there? Not many, but we shall leave them for our next lesson. 18. Are you going out this afternoon? Yes, I am going for a walk, then I am going to the club to dine, and afterwards to the theatre. 19. I think I saw you the night before last at the opera? It is very likely; a friend of mine had taken a box and invited a few friends. 20. Did you like the performance? Very much, it was the best I have ever seen, and I have been to many. 21. Do you get up early? Between six and seven, and as I retire

late I hardly have enough rest. 22. Each person needs a certain number of hours' rest, which is generally eight hours, and if you do not give yourself that amount of rest your health must suffer. I know that, and I am already beginning to feel rather old.

LESSON XXX.

The Participle.

The Participle partakes of the nature of an adjective and a verb. Verbs of the first conjugation form the present participle by changing the final ar into ante, and those of the second and third conjugation by changing the er and ir into iente. These are sometimes used as nouns, and are then called active participles.

Examples of the formation of the participle:-

Amante, loving, lover, from amar, to love.
Asistente, assisting, assistant, from asistir, to assist.
Obedeciente, obedient, from obedecer, to obey.
Oyente, hearing, hearer, from oir, to hear.

Active participles can only be formed from some verbs.

Past Participles agree in gender and number with the subject, but if preceded by the verb *Haber* they are invariable. Thus, *La he escrito*, I have written to her. When the past participle comes after any other verb it agrees with the subject.

The Participle may be active, passive, regular or irregular. It may be used in some cases as a substantive or as an adjective. The irregular passive participle ends in **cho**, so and **to**. Thus: satisfecho, from satisfacer, impreso from imprimir, and puesto, from poner.

VOCABULARY.

All passive participles that do not end in ado or ido are irregular.

Abrir, to open cubrir, to cover

Infinitive.

Participle.

| abierto, opened
| cubierto, covered

VOCABULARY, continued:-

Infinitive.

decir, to say, tell
escribir, to write
hacer, to do, make
imprimir, to print
morir, to die
poner, to put
resolver, to resolve
ver, to see
volver, to return
satisfacer, to satisfy

Participle.
dicho, said, told
escrito, written
hecho, made
impreso, printed
muerto, dead
puesto, put
resulto, resolved
visto, seen
vuelto, returned
satisfecho, satisfied.

Active participles or verbal nouns and adjectives, with the verbs from which they are derived:—

Amar, to love practicar, to practice principiar, to begin creer, to believe tratar, to deal tocar, to touch vivir, to live rasidir, to reside estudiar, to study escribir, to write

amante, lover
practicante, practitioner
principiante, beginner
creyente, believer
tratante, dealer
tocante, concerning, touching
viviente, living being
residente, resident
estudiante, student
escribiente, a writer or lawyer's

EXERCISE XXX.

I. Have you read Don Quixote and the other works of Cervantes? 2. I have read Don Quixote and think it very interesting, but I have not read any of his other works. 3. Do you know that 1916 was the tercentenary of Cervantes and also of Shakespeare? Yes, it is very strange that the greatest literary genius of each of the two countries lived at the same time. 4. Have you read Don Quixote in Spanish? No, I read it in English, but I intend to read it in Spanish next month. 5. I always like to read a work in the language in which it was written, and not a translation. 6. Yes. I have noticed that all great works lose something in the translation, and I do not think it the fault of the translator. 7. Will you kindly open the window? This one is open, but I will open the door, then we shall have a current of air. 8. Have you written to that firm yet? I have written and posted the letter, as the matter is urgent. 9. I should like to know if your friend is in the habit of coming punctually. 10. He usually comes very punctually, but to-day the roads are bad owing to the snow, and this may delay him. 11. How is he coming? By motor-car, but even the best motors are sometimes very much delayed. 12. What are you

going to do next winter? I have no programme, no plan, and no idea. Of one thing I am certain, that I do not intend to remain in London another winter if I can help it. 13. Well, I must admit that, for those who have the means to go away, it seems rather strange to suffer the cold and the fogs, which can in no case improve the health. 14. There are many places that have a beautiful climate during the months of November, December, January, February, March, April, and May. What places are they? 15. Havana, the capital of Cuba, enjoys an ideal climate during those months. For the present I should prefer some place much nearer London. 16. Well, why not go to the Canary Islandsa little sea voyage? I do not like the sea because I get sea-sick. Well, cross over to Calais, go to Paris, then take the express for Madrid, and from there go on to Seville. 17. Why not stay in Madrid? Because it is too cold in winter. Well then, I think I will go to Seville. I suppose it is very cheap, living in Spain? 18. All depends on how you live. If you live in Spain in the best hotels as you do here, I think you will find it just as expensive as in London. 19. If you want English food in Spain, you will find it just as expensive as if you wanted Spanish food in London. 20. I believe it is the same everywhere. Then how is it that people (persons) say they find living in some countries so very cheap? 21. I generally find it is because abroad they do not live in the style they live in at home. Where that is the case the comparison is of no value. 22. But a friend of mine told me he saved a great deal of money by living abroad. Oh, yes, I was speaking to your friend about it last night. His way is very easy to understand. In England he lives in great luxury, and abroad he lives without any luxury.

LESSON XXXI.

The Adverbs. (Los Averbios.)

The simplest explanation of an adverb is that it is a word added to a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, to modify its meaning; thus, He writes well. El escribe bien. Adverbs are indeclinable.

ADVERBS OF PLACE. aqui, here (in this acá, here, hither

cerca, near lejos, far

donde, where (in allá, there, thither what place) adonde, where, whither

place) ahi, alli, there (in that place)

enfrente, in front dentro, inside fuera, outside arriba, above

abajo, below delante, in front detrás, behind encima, on top

debajo, under junto, together.

ADVERBS OF TIME.

hoy, to-day ayer, yesterday anteaver, the day

mañana, to-morahora, now row antes, before

después, after luego, later tarde, late before yesterday temprano, early presto, pronto, soon siembre, always

nunca, jamás, never ya, already mientras, whilst aun, even todavia, yet antaño, formerly.

ADVERBS OF MANNER OR QUALITY.

bien, well mal, bad como, how cual, as así, thus abenas, hardly quedo, quietly, softly, gently recio, strongly duro, hard despacio, slowly alto, high, loud bajo, low, under,

excepto, except salvo, saving, excepting conforme, in ac. cordance adrede. adredemente, purposely, expressly abosta, abostadamente, designedly, on purpose buenamente, willingly, well malamente, badly

frecuentemente. frequently fácilmente, easily elocuentemente. eloquently perfectamente, perfectly constantemente, constantly doctamente, learnedly elegantemente, elegantly.

Other adverbs ending in ly in English end in mente in Spanish.

ADVERBS OF QUANTITY OR DEGREE.

mucho, much poco, little muy, very

below

casi, nearly harto, bastante, enough

tanto, so much cuanto, how much nada, nothing.

Tanto and cuanto drop the last syllable when followed by another adverb, an adjective (except the comparatives mejor, better, &c.), or a participle: Tan lejos, so far (distance); tan fácil, so easy: tan cansado, so tired; but tanto mejor, all the better; tanto peor, all the worse, &c. Cuán is not much used.

ADVERBS OF COMPARISON.

más, more; menos, less; mejor, better; peor, worse.

And sometimes those of quantity, such as tan, tanto, cuan, cuanto.

ADVERBS OF ORDER.

primeramente, firstly ultimamente, lastly. successivamente, successfully

And sometimes antes, después, and other adverbs of time and place.

ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION.

si, yes cierto, certain ciertamente, certainly

verdaderamente, truly también, also.

ADVERBS OF NEGATION.

no, no

nunca, never tampoco, neither.
jamás, never, ever

Adverbs of Doubt.

acaso, quizá, quizás, perhaps.

Adverbs are formed from Adjectives by adding mente to the feminine form; thus, perfectamente (from perfecto-a), facilmente (from facil).

VOCABULARY.

Formed, formado add, añadir adding, añadiendo supposing, suponiendo case, el caso last, último feminine, el femenino paint, la pintura to paint, pintar to admit, admitir augmentation, la aumentación diminution, la diminución near, cerca very near, cerquita, muy cerca straight, derecho [derecho quite straight, derechito, muy I agree, estoy de acuerdo determined, determinado to mean, significar translation, la traducción sea-side, la orilla del mar south, el sur, sud

Marconigram, el Ma. conigrama wireless telegraphy, la telégrafia to recognise, reconocer [sin hilos cable, el cable telephone, el teléfono in these days, en estos dias (or hoy sea, el, la, mar (com. gen.) [dia) air, el aire around, alrededor to arrange, arreglar to build, edificar airship, el buque de aire aeroplane, el aeroplano improvement(s), perfeccionadanger, el peligro [miento(s) aviation, la aviación advanced, avanzado [tras-) sport, el desporte transformed, transformado (or to dream, soñar; dream, el sueño tremendous, tremendo change(s), el (los) cambio(s).

EXERCISE XXXI.

I. I see that many Adverbs are formed by adding the termination mente to the Adjective, but supposing that a number of Adverbs are together, would you add mente to each? 2. In that case mente is only added to the last, but the others remain in the feminine; for example: Your father writes clearly, concisely and elegantly. 3. The judge spoke learnedly and eloquently. Yes, I heard him. Who do you think writes the better, his brother or he? 4. He writes easily, his eldest brother writes more easily, and his youngest brother, the lawyer, writes less easily. 5. Does the artist paint as easily as his father? No, Miss, his father is very famous, and paints very easily. 6. Are there any adverbs which admit of augmentation or diminution? Yes, near, pretty near: straight, quite straight. 7. These authors do not write much, but they write well. I agree with you, I have read some of their works. 8. Did you see your partner to-day? No, I have not seen him to-day, nor yesterday, nor the day before yesterday. 9. Is there any difference between agui and aca? I see that in the vocabulary they are both translated here. 10. Aqui means in a certain determined place, while aca means here in a general sense, for example: I am here. II. The difference between alli and alla is that alli means there in a certain place, whilst alla means over there in a general sense. 12. What is the best translation for where, donde or adonde? Well, donde means at what place; for example, where is your house? And adonde signifies to where (or whither), for example: Where are you going? meaning whither. 13. Where are you going to-morrow? I am going to the sea-side to see where my friend has built his house. 14. Is it fine now at the sea-side? Yes, on the south coast, and I want to avail myself of the fine weather while it lasts. 15. Did you receive a wireless message (Marconigram) from your daughter? Yes, Miss, I received it early this morning. 16. Did you speak to your friend in Madrid yesterday? Yes, I spoke to him on the wireless telephone and could recognise his voice; wonderful, is it not? I should think so. 17. Are the cables much used in these days? Less and less every day, owing to the great advance in wireless telegraphy. 18. Which way do you like to travel, by land, sea, or air? By air, and owing to the improvements in airships I do not think there is much danger. 19. What I should consider an ideal voyage is a trip round the world in an airship, and I intend to see if I can arrange this for next month. 20. Does it cost much? They tell me that the price has been reduced. My son enjoyed his trip from Madrid to Seville by airship very much. 21. They say that aviation is very advanced in Spain. In recent years it has been taken up as a sport. 22. How transformed the world has become. How little did our grandparents dream of these tremendous changes.

LESSON XXXII.

The Prepositions.

The principal Prepositions used in Spanish are the following:—

a, at, in, to
ante, before
bajo, below, under, on
con, with
contra, against
de, of, from, by
desde, from, since
en, in, at, into, on
entre, between, amongst
hacia, towards, about

hasta, as far as, until, till, up to para, for, in order to, to por, for, on account of, by, through según, according to, as per sin, without so, under, on (not much used) sobre, on, upon, about, totras, after, behind. [wards

The English prepositions for and by are translated into Spanish by para and por; a few examples will make their respective employment quite clear.

This book is by my father, and it is for you. Este libro es por mi padre, y es para Vd.

This music is by the great composer, and he sent it for your sister.

Esta música es por el gran compositor, y la manda para su hermana.

To make the matter easier, you may consider that **para** expresses aim, object, or destination; and that **por** signifies by, through, for the sake of, in favour or on behalf of, in exchange; it conveys the idea of want or requirement, favour, duration of time, direction; it also denotes intrinsic motive.

Use PARA in the following and similar sentences:

Estas flores son para Vd., señorita.

Esta carta no es para mi, sino para Vd.

¿Tiene Vd. papel para escribir?

Mañana en ocho partiré para la Habana.

Trabajo para ganar dinero.

Para un cuarto tan grande las ventanas son pequeñas. Estoy para salir en seguida. ¿Para que quiere Vd. el libro?

Para leerlo y prestarlo a mi hijo.

Dejaré el ejercicio para mañana.

Para decir la verdad, no quiero salir esta noche.

These flowers are for you, miss.

This letter is not for me, but for you.

Have you writing-paper (lit. paper for writing)?

To-morrow week I shall leave for Havana.

I work in order to make money.

For such a large room the windows are small.

I am *about* to go out at once. What do you want the book for?

To read (it) and lend (it) to my son.

I shall leave the exercise for to-morrow.

To tell the truth, I do not wish to go out to-night.

Use POR in the following and similar sentences:

Cambié el primer tomo por el segundo. Vendí mi caballo por £100. Ella pasa por muy joven. Hablé por su hijo de Vd.

Lo haré por el herido.

Envié por una nueva novela. ¿Por que envia Vd.?
Por una cajita de plumas. ¿Por que calle pasó Vd.?
Por esta.
Llegué por el último tren.
Por fortuna llegué a tiempo.

Estudio por la mañana y por la tarde.

I changed the first volume for the second.

I sold my horse for £100. She passes as very young.

I spoke for (in favour of) your son.

I shall do it for the wounded man (for his sake).

I sent for a new novel.
What are you sending for?
(For) a small box of pens.
Through what street did you
Through this one. [pass?
I arrived by the last train.

Fortunately (By good fortune) I arrived in time.

I study in the morning and in the evening.

Por fuerte que sea Vd. debe cuidarse la salud.

However strong you may be you should take care of your health.

VOCABULARY.

To make a mistake, equivocarse prove, to, probar in the Spanish fashion, a la española nature, la naturaleza town, el pueblo, la ciudad every time, cada vez narrow, estrecho, angosto custom. la costumbre without doubt, sin duda try, to, tratar very well, muy bien agreed, conforme bag, el saco overcoat, el sobretodo, el gaban coat, la casaca frock-coat, la levita waistcoat, el chaleco shirt, la camisa trousers, el pantalón pants, el calzoncillo socks, los calcetines pair(s), el par (los pares) tie, la corbata collar, el cuello rather large, algo grande very little (quantity), muy poco double advantage, doble ventaja amusement, la diversión pastime, el pasatiempo studying for the bar, estudiando para abogado influence, la influencia who knows, quien sabe perhaps, tal vez, quiza to interest, interesar

public, el público wholesale, por mayor retail, por menor by the dozen, por docena to marry by proxy, casarse por poderes [mucho ... to cease, cesar to work very hard, trabajar to publish, publicar to be successful, tener buen exito to merit, merecer in order to, para subject, el sujeto few, pocos, pocas country, el país, la nación its own, su propio, sus propios food, el alimento fruit, la fruta mineral, el mineral healthy, saludable river, el rio good climate, buen clima merchant, el comerciante all over the world, por todo el workshop, el taller [mundo factory, la fábrica curious, curioso to produce, producir embroidery, bordado silk cloths, telas de seda tissues, los tisúes texture, el tejido exquisite, exquisito perfection, la perfección permanence, la permanencia beauty, la hermosura.

EXERCISE XXXII.

1. Why are so many examples given of the use of the prepositions para and por, and no examples of the others? 2. Because all who

learn Spanish have a difficulty in knowing where to use para and por, and have no difficulty in using the other prepositions. 3. You cannot make a mistake in the use of at, in, and to. I will prove it to you. "At eight I am going to the theatre." "She dresses in the Spanish fashion." 4. Before all, look at the thermometer. It is below zero. With this cold I can do nothing. Well, it would be against nature if it were not cold from now until March. 5. Since I came from Spain I have felt cold. In what part of Spain did you live? I lived in Cadiz for five years. I lived in a town between Seville and Madrid, and every time I went towards Seville I felt the heat. 6. Why did you go there in the heat? I went to see my aunt, because according to my custom I spend some weeks with my relatives in the spring. 7. Without doubt you will go this year, will you not? Yes, but before everything I want to visit Asturias; will you come with me? 8. I should like to go, but you see how busy I am. I shall try to go, but this week it would be impossible, in a fortnight, who knows? 9. Very well, it will also be more convenient for me. Well then, in a fortnight we shall go to Spain; we shall leave by the steamer that starts early next month. 10. Agreed. I shall be ready, and I am not going to take much luggage. Only one trunk and one bag. How many trunks will you take? One small one. II. Is it necessary to take an overcoat? I will take a very light one and two coats, one frock coat, three waistcoats, half-a-dozen shirts, four pairs of trousers, three of pants, half-a-dozen pairs of socks, some ties, a dozen collars and handkerchiefs. 12. Do you think you will be able to put all those things in one trunk? I think you will require two. No, my trunk is rather large. And what are you taking? 13. Very little. I want to buy the things I need in Spain; you see there is a double advantage in this: the practice of speaking Spanish, and the amusement of buying. It will be an agreeable pastime. 14. What is your son studying? He is studying for the bar, and I fear that much influence is required, but who knows, perhaps he may succeed. 15. How many books are there in this library? There are here over five thousand books. And how many of them, do you think, interest the general public? Let us say about one hundred. 16. How would you translate the following sentences using the proper prepositions? After the winter the spring. To marry by proxy. To sell (by) wholesale or retail. To sell by the dozen. 17. He works without ceasing. According to what they say he has made a fortune, but he has worked very hard. 18. Has your father published his book? Yes, it has been very successful, and he merits all that he may gain, as he has done everything possible to make it interesting. 19. What is the subject of

the book? His travels in Central and South America, and two years ago he published his travels in Spain. With that book also he was very successful. 20. Spain is one of the few countries that can live on its own products; it has everything it can require in foods, fruits, and minerals of every kind, wholesome water, a great number of rivers, and a good climate. 21. In the sixteenth century Spain was the greatest manufacturing nation. Spanish merchants were to be found all over the world. There are still many workshops and factories all over the Peninsula. 22. It is curious that the other nations have not yet succeeded in producing embroidery, silk cloths, tissues, and gold and silver textures, of such an exquisite perfection, permanence and beauty, as those manufactured in Spain.

LESSON XXXIII.

The Conjunctions.

"Conjunction" is derived from the Latin conjunctio, and it signifies a connective word used to unite other words, phrases, or sentences. It is indeclinable. There are nine kinds of Conjunctions in Spanish.

Connective or Copulative Conjunctions.

Y, and (e before i or hi except when the h precedes the diphthong ie—thus, hielo; in which case we say y hielo; here the i does not clash with the i sound of the y, because the word hielo is pronounced like the English word yello(w): therefore it reads "ee yello," which means and ice).

EXAMPLES: El lunes y martes, Monday and Tuesday; hijos e hijas, sons and daughters; nieve y hielo, snow and ice.

Ni, neither, nor.

No he comprado las acciones hoy, ni las compraré mañana. I have not bought the shares to-day, nor shall I buy them to-morrow.

Ni él ni su esposa. Neither he nor his wife.

Que, that. The conjunction que serves to join sentences, introducing a subordinate clause. Do not confuse the relative pronoun que with the conjunction que.

Example: El pianista que llegó ayer dice que saldrà mañana. The pianist who arrived yesterday says that he will leave to-morrow.

The first que is a pronoun, and the second is a conjunction.

También, also, too, likewise, as well.

Tampoco, nor, neither, not even.

Disjunctive Conjunctions.

O, or, either (u before o or ho); thus:

Seis o siete, six or seven. Siete u ocho, seven or eight. Plata u oro, silver or gold. O Vd. o él, either you or he.

Ya, already, now, presently.

Ya lo uno, ya lo otro, now this, now that (or sometimes this, sometimes that).

Sea que, even if, though.

Siguiera, at least, even though, ever so.

Ni siquiera, not even.

Adversative Conjunctions.

- Pero, but, however. Pero is used adversatively, where one sentence or word is set against another: Voy a Roma, pero no a Venecia. I am going to Rome, but not to Venice.
- Sino, but, only, except. Sino is used in the sense of exception, and is only employed when a negative precedes; e.g. No he escrito a ese caballero, sino a su hermano. I have not written to that gentleman, but to his brother.
- Mas, but. Me gustaria, hacerlo, mas no puedo. I should like to do it, but I cannot.
- Cuando, even, though, provided, if. El no haria eso, cuando le importara una fortuna. He would not do that, even if it meant a fortune.
- Aunque, bien que although, though. Aunque pobre es honrado. Although poor he is honourable,

Antes, antes bien, rather. No es holgazan, antes bien es industrioso. He is not lazy, but rather he is industrious.

Mas que, even if, even though.

Siquiera, at least, even though.

Many adverbial forms may be employed as conjunctions, such as:

- A pesar de, in spite of. A pesar de eso se embarca hoy. In spite of that he sails to-day.
- Con todo eso, for all that, nevertheless. Con todo eso no hay modo de hacer el negocio. For all that, there is no way of doing the business.
- No obstante, sin embargo, nevertheless, notwithstanding.

 No obstante el peligro volará en ese aeroplano. Notwithstanding the danger he will fly in that aeroplane.
- Si bien, granted that. Si bien lo ha dicho él mismo, no lo creo. Granted that he said it himself I do not believe it.

Como quiera que, notwithstanding that.

There are many others besides the above.

Conditional Conjunctions.

Si, if, whether. Si viene digame. If he comes, tell me.

Como, if, in case, as. Como fui a Paris, no le vi. As I went to Paris I did not see him.

Con tal que, on condition, provided that. Con tal que lo haga podrá salir. Provided that he does it, he may go out.

Siempre que, granted that.

Dado que, granted that.

Ya que, as, since.

Causal Conjunctions. Used to express the cause or reason for something:—

Constant River Charles

Porque, because, as, for. Ella no fué porque estaba cansada. She did not go because she was tired.

Pues, as, since, for, well, why, well now. Le contestaré pues me lo pide. I shall answer him as he asked me to.

- Pues que, as, because, since, for. Lo ha leido, pues que me lo ha dicho. He has read it, for he has told me so.
- Puesto que, supuesto que, visto que, seeing that. No mandaré los géneros, puesto que no ha contestado. I shall not send the goods, seeing that he has not answered.

Continuative Conjunctions.

- **Pues**, then. Digo, pues, que es verdad. I say, then, it is true. Pues is sometimes a continuative or causal conjunction, and it may even be used as an adverb, and in many other ways.
- Asi que, so that. Asi que según lo que dicen, se embarcarán el jueves. So that, according to what they say, they will sail on Thursday.

And many others.

Comparative Conjunctions.

Como, as, like; asi, asi como, as, just as, like; como que, as; and many others which are really adverbs, become conjunctions when they unite two or more terms of comparison.

Final Conjunctions serve to express the end or object of a preceding sentence:—

- Para que, in order that, so as to, that. Se lo dije al abogado para que lo sepa. I to'd the lawyer so that he may know it.
- Porque, because, for, that. El ahorra, porque desea hacer fortuna. He saves because he desires to make a fortune.
- A fin de que, in order that. El estudia, a fin de que pueda hablar con facilidad. He studies in order that he may speak fluently.

Illative Conjunctions relate to or infer something:

Conque, so, thus, therefore, consequently. Vd. le pago muy bien, conque no tiene motivo para quejarse. You paid him very well, therefore he has no reason to complain.

- Luego, then, therefore, further. Hace cinco minutos le vi pasar en antomóvil, luego no estará muy lejos. Five minutes ago I saw him pass in a motor, therefore he cannot be very far.
- Pues, so, for, therefore, consequently, hence. Ella no quiere estudiar, pues ella lo sentirá más tarde. She does not wish to study, consequently she will be sorry for it later.
- Por consiguiente, consequently, in consequence, accordingly. Ese hombre come demasiado: for consiguiente, sufre de muchas enfermedades. That man eats too much, consequently he suffers from many illnesses.

In the above explanations only the Conjunctions most frequently employed are mentioned; there are, naturally, a great many more.

VOCABULARY.

Comparatively, comparativaexplain, explicar mente philosopher, el filósofo optimist, el optimista pessimist, el pesimista minute, el minuto remain, quedar stamp (postage), el sello, la estam-Spilla envelope, el sobre drawer, la gaveta, el cajón to the right, a la derecha to the left, a la izquierda size, el tamaño writing paper, el papel de escribir, papel para cartas blotting paper, el papel secante to establish, establecer a branch (house), una sucursal to increase, aumentar enormously, enormemente during, durante kind, la clase goods, géneros, mercancias, mercaderias to mention, mencionar a few, unos pocos machinery, la maquinaria

stationery, artículos para escritorio knife, el cuchillo fork, el tenedor spoon, la cuchara cement, el cemento button, el botón ink, la tinta colour, el color varnish, el barniz is there a sale? ¿ hay venta ! starch, el almidón chemicals, productos químicos china ware, articulos de loza cardboard, el cartón photographic goods, artículos para fotografia bicvcle, la bicicleta otherwise, de otro modo proverb, el proverbio it does not matter, no importa to accustom oneself, acostumto read aloud, leer en alta vo? the pronunciation, la pronuncia-

tools, las herramientas

EXERCISE XXXIII.

I. Your friend, although comparatively poor, is nevertheless happier than you. How do you explain this? 2. Well, he is a philosopher and I am not; besides he is an optimist and I am a pessimist. 3. I should like to write a letter before going out; do you know if there is time before the train starts? 4. There is just half-an-hour, so if you can write the letter in twenty minutes there will remain ten minutes, and we shall be in time. 5. Oh, I can do that easily. Have you stamps? Here they are. Have you a larger envelope? In that drawer on your right you will find all sizes. 6. The pens, ink and writing-paper are on your left and here is the blotting-paper. 7. Are you very busy? Yes, I am establishing a branch of my firm in Madrid; my business with Spain has increased enormously during the last two years. 8. What kinds of English goods are sold best in Spain? It would take too long to tell you all, but I will mention a few. 9. Machinery, tools, pencils, stationery, knives, forks and spoons, cement, buttons, ink, colours, paint and varnish. 10. Is there a sale for other things besides those you have mentioned? Yes, for example: Tea, starch, chemicals, china-ware, cardboard, photographic goods, bicycles, etc. II. I had no idea that a sale could be found for so many articles; do you advise me to open a house also? Yes, I think you would do a very good business. 12. In order to make it a success it is necessary to know Spanish, otherwise I do not think it would be worth while. 13. You are right, and in order to know it well I study one hour every day, and if I have time, two or three hours. 14. When do you think it would be best to open? That depends on your knowledge of the language. 15. What is the difference between the words viajero and viajante? Viajero means one who travels for pleasure, or to write his experiences, and viajante means a commercial traveller. 16. Well, do you understand the use of the conjunctions? Yes, very well, they are easy. 17. Are there many proverbs in Spanish? I think there are more proverbs in Spanish than in any other language. 18. Where could I find the Spanish proverbs? Several books of proverbs have been published, and if you read Don Quixote, you will find a great many. 19. Do you know that it is 9 o'clock? Then we cannot go to the theatre; well, it does not matter, we shall go to-morrow evening. 20. It is very necessary for you to read aloud, in order that you may accustom yourself to the pronunciation.

LESSON XXXIV.

The Interjections.

An Interjection is a word which expresses some sudden emotion. Sometimes the same interjection is used to express joy, astonishment, anger, &c., the meaning changing according to the voice and manner of the speaker. The most common interjections are the following:—

iAh!	iea!	joh!	isus!
iav!	jeh!	iojalá!	i tate!
ibah!	iguay!	jox!	i uf!
ica!	jhola!	j þuf!	izape!
¡caspita!	jhuy!	j quia!	listant aged

i Ah! i ay! and i oh! may mean almost anything.

i Bah! signifies displeasure, and sometimes wonder, disdain, or repugnance.

i Ca! or i Quia! indicates negation or incredulity.

¡ Caspita! shows admiration or surprise.

j Ea! is used to attract attention, to urge, to impose silence, or it may even mean anger and contradiction.

i Eh! is employed to call, to ask, to warn, &c.

¡ Guay! to intimidate or to threaten.

¡ Hola! to call inferiors and intimate friends; it also indicates joy or surprise.

i Huy! expresses pain and may also indicate disgust.

i Ojalá! manifests a great desire for something. This word comes from the Arabic, and means Would to God!

i Ox! employed to drive away birds.

¡ Puf! indicates disgust or displeasure.

i Sus! serves to encourage.

; Tate! expresses surprise, and serves to warn of a danger.

¡ Uf! signifies exhaustion or suffocation.

¡Zape! is employed to drive away cats, or to indicate some risk.

There are many others that are easy to understand, such as *i Bravo! i Cuidado!*—take care! *i Toma!*—there! *i Fuego!*—fire!

VOCABULARY.

Very many, muchisimos flower pot, maceta strong, fuerte toothache, el dolor de muelas headache. el dolor de cabeza joy, la alegria pretty well, bastante bien no interest, ningún interes country life, la vida campestre bird, el pajaro, el ave fish, el pez, los peces - (when caught), pescado dear friend, querido amigo quite mistaken, enteramente equivocado such things, tales cosas What interests you? ¿ Qué le interesa? Stock Exchange, la Bolsa the markets, los mercados finance, la finanza pleasure, el placer I mean, quiero decir

works, obras, la obra limited, limitado rare words, las palabras raras I am sure, estoy seguro to amount to, llegar a [se rie? Why do you laugh? ¿ Por qué the majority, la mayoría smaller, menor, más pequeño less, menos ambition, la ambición the fact is, el hecho es hundreds, centenares work, el trabajo to sleep, dormir to consider, considerar an earthly heaven, un cielo - terrestre happiness, la felicidad on earth, sobre la tierra stockbroker, el corredor good luck, la buena suerte shopping (to go -), visitar las tiendas

EXERCISE XXXIV.

I. Are there any other interjections? Very many more, but it is not necessary to learn them all. 2. Look what you are doing! The flower pot has fallen and broken. What a pity! It has not broken, it is very strong. 3. Mind your head, that door is not very high. Before you go out tell me, as I should like to show you an article in to-day's paper. 4. Oh! What a toothache! What! you suffer from toothache and headache? I am very sorry. Thank God, I have never had either. 5. Oh, what joy! I have won in the lottery! How much did you win? One hundred dollars! Well, it is not much. It is better than nothing. 6. Little by little I have learned by heart one thousand words in Spanish. Is it possible! Yes, and I have studied one hour a day for three months. 7. Well, then, do you know the language? I speak, read and write pretty well, but I have a little difficulty. 8. How is that? I find a difficulty in reading Spanish novels, because many authors use such rare words. 9. Are you sure they are rare words? Well, perhaps I should not say rare words; you see my English vocabulary is so limited; I take no interest in country life, or in flowers, birds or fishes, or even in food or fruit. 10. My dear friend! It seems to me that your interests

are somewhat limited. Oh, no! You are quite mistaken; I have met many men in the city who take no interest in such things. II. Well, then, what interests you? The Stock Exchange, the markets, finance in general, and for pleasure, the theatre and travelling. 12. When I say that I like to travel, I mean that I like to see other countries, and cities, not country life, but always city life; you see now, my world is small. 13. I see now your difficulty, and of course it would not be easy to find many works so limited. You say that you know a thousand words in Spanish? 14. Yes, and I know them perfectly, and it is curious that I am sure the words I use in English do not amount to one thousand. 15. Why do you laugh? Do you not know that the majority of men have even a smaller vocabulary than I have, and that they take interest in less than I do? 16. You are right. But I laugh, because I cannot understand a man full of ambition, as you appear to be, taking so little interest in the world. 17. I am very sorry, but I cannot see things as you see them. The fact is (that) I know hundreds of men who take no interest in anything except their work in the city and sleep, and when everything goes well in the city and they sleep well, they consider (that) they are in an earthly heaven. 18. I see now that there is happiness on earth and that some men require more than others, and according to your views the less one requires the happier he will be. It is really beautiful. 19. Last night some friends dined with me; the husband is a stockbroker; all he desires in this world is good luck on the Stock Exchange and to sleep well; his wife told my wife that all she wants in this world is to go shopping and to sleep well; they are both as happy as they can be. 20. Do you know my conversation with you has done me good? Why? Because I never knew there was so much happiness in this world. Well, friend, I am glad I have done somebody good.

Augmentative & Diminutive Terminations.

The Augmentatives most in use are on and azo.

The Diminutives are ito, ita, cito, cita, &c.

Examples:

Hombre, man; hombrón, a tall or big man; hombrecito, a nice little man.

Mujer, woman; mujerona, a big woman; mujercita, a nice little woman.

LESSON XXXV.

Construction.

Construction, commonly called *Syntax*, consists in the arrangement and connection of words in a sentence; it might be called *the form of the expression of a thought*, because the clear and exact expression of a thought depends on the manner in which the words are placed according to established usage.

The construction of sentences in Spanish offers no particular difficulty as it is very similar to English construction, and the student has no doubt by this time become acquainted with many of the Spanish forms.

In the usual construction of a sentence, the subject precedes the verb:

La nación cubana crece, The Cuban nation grows.

The verb precedes the adverb by which it is modified:

Ella cantó divinamente, She sang divinely.

When two or more things are mentioned the same order is maintained as in English:

Norte y Sur, North and South.

As in English, the adjective is employed both attributively and predicatively; attributively, it usually comes after the substantive, but when used with a signification different from its ordinary one, or in poetry and even in conversation, especially in the case of short adjectives, it may be placed before the substantive:

Un libro interesante,
La Argentina es grande,
Un gran hombre,
An interesting book.
The Argentine is large.
A great man.

The article and the adjective must agree with the substantive in gender and number:

El libro interesante, The interesting book.

Las casas pequeñas, The small houses.

A double negative is always preferable in Spanish:

No he visto a nadie, 1 have seen no one. (117)

"To have" as a principal verb is translated by tener:

Tienen propiedad, They have property.

-as an auxiliary it is translated by haber:

Han hablado, They have spoken.

Possessive adjectives agree with the substantives they qualify in gender a d number:

Nuestros retratos, Our portraits. Nuestras pinturas, Our paintings:

Mio, tuyo, and suyo, -Mine, thine, and yours, -when used as possessive adjectives drop the final syllable, thus:

Mi retrato. Tu pintura, Su dibujo.

My portrait. Thy bainting. Your (or his) drawing.

For the plural add s to the adjectives and the substantives, thus: Mis retratos, my portraits, etc.

In addressing a person the pronoun is placed after the substantive:

> Venga, amigo mio. Cante, hija mia.

Come, my friend. Sing, my daughter.

The relative pronoun is indispensable in Spanish:

El abogado a quien escribí es muy hábil,

The lawyer whom I wrote to (to whom I wrote) is very clever.

The preposition de is added after the following words: Miedo, fear: valor, valour; verguenza, shame; lastima, pity; tiempo, time, thus:

Ella tiene miedo de ir en un aeroplano, She is afraid to go in an aeroplane.

Ese niño tiene vergüenza de haber roto su juguete, That child is ashamed of having broken its toy.

Tiempo de lluvia, Rainy weather, or rainy season.

For the sake of euphony, when two pronouns come together the first is changed to se.

El se lo ha dado a su hijo, He has given it to his son. instead of El le lo. This avoids the repetition of the l.

: Ya se lo di, I have already given it to him, instead of Ya le lo dí.

In order to give greater clearness and emphasis the double objective case is frequently used in Spanish.

Mi amigo me lo dio a mi, My friend gave it to me (gave me it).

El se lo dijo a Vd.,

He told it to you (told you it).

When preceded by a the second objective case should not be used without employing the first; the sentence should therefore read thus:

A ella le mandé el libro. I sent her the book. A nosotros nos escribieron, They wrote to us.

A ella la escriben, or la escriben a ella, They write to her.

When the first objective case comes after the verb, then the second is placed after the first, thus:-

I am writing to him. Estov escribiendole a él, El esta hablandonos a nosotros, He is speaking to us. Ella esta buscandole a Vd., She is looking for you.

In putting impersonal verbs into Spanish, the pronoun "it" is not translated.

It seems, parece; It suits, conviene; It rains, llueve;

It snows, nieve.

There are some verbs which require a poculiar idiomatic construction, e.g.:-

Gustar, to like; hacer falta, to have need of; doler, to ache, to pain, to be sorry; pesar, to regret; acomodar, to suit; convenir, to suit; importar, to be important; placer, to please.

Their use is illustrated by the following sentences:— ¿ Le gusta a Vd. la musica? Do vou like music? Me gusta comer a la una. I like to dine at one o'clock. ¿ Le gusta a Vd. dar un paseo? Do you feel inclined to go for a walk?

This verb gustar also means "to be fond of" when followed by de:-

Ella gusta de la pintura, She is fond of painting.

As an active verb gustar means "to taste"— ¿Gusta Vd. el chocolate? Do you taste the chocolate?

Examples of the other verbs:-

Le hace falta un mapa, He needs a map.

Mucho le place traerlo, He is very pleased to bring it.

A mi me importa ese asunto, That matter is important to me.

Le pesa de haber ido, He is sorry he went.

In the Passive voice the preposition de or por may be employed when reference is made to actions of the mind, such as feeling or emotion; in other cases only por is used.

El es amado de ella, He is loved by her.

El documento ha sido escrito por su tio, or

El documento esta escrito por su tio,

The document was written by your uncle.

The present subjunctive is used instead of the imperative with negatives:

No lo digas, Do not say it (2nd pers. sing., familiar.)
No lo diga Vd., Do not say it (polite form, 3rd pers.)

There are three ways of using se, as will be seen by the following sentence:—

Se cree que se vendió el caballo, pero el público se engaña; yo se lo explicaré,

It is believed that the horse was sold, but the public is deceived (deceives itself); I shall explain it to you.

In the above sentence se is first used as an *indefinite* pronoun, then as a reflexive, next also as a reflexive, and finally as a personal pronoun—the indirect object.

There are many ways of constructing a sentence in Spanish, and it is sometimes possible to express the same idea correctly in as many as eight or ten different ways.

Verbs, in Spanish, govern various prepositions according to the idea to be conveyed.

The following examples may be useful:—
Contar una cosa, to relate something.
Contar con una cosa, to count upon a thing.
Dar algo, to give something.
Dar con algo, to find something.

Dejar hacer algo, to let anything be done. Dejar de hacer algo, to leave anything undone. Estar con cuidado, to be anxious. Estar de cuidado, to be dangerously ill. Gustar un plato, to taste a dish (of food). Gustar de un plato, to be fond of a dish. [someone. Participar una cosa, to communicate something to Participar de una cosa, to participate in anything. Preguntar a uno, to ask someone something. Preguntar por uno, to ask or inquire about someone. Salir con una empresa, to carry out an enterprise. Salir de una empresa, to give up an enterprise. Tratar de vinos, to talk about wines. Tratar en vinos, to deal in wines. Vender al contado, to sell for cash. Vender de contado, to sell on the instant.

VOCABULARY.

Anything, algo difference, la diferencia to forget, olvidar both words, ambas palabras all right, esta bien excessive, excesivo owing to, a causa de the cloud, la nube to refresh refrescar the atmosphere, la atmósfera beneficent, benéfico shower, el chaparrón maximum, lo máximo minimum, lo mínimo to rise, elevarse to mean, significar to complain, quejarse degrees, grados thermometer, el termómetro freezing-point, punto de congelacentigrade, centigrado boiling-point, punto de ebullición curiosity, una curiosidad the fact is, el hecho es the greater part, la mayor parte the world, el mundo zero, el cero to convert, para convertir to multiply, multiplicar to divide, dividir

surprising, sorprendente rcálculo to add, añadir calculation, la calculación, el who knows! ¡ quien sabe! to deduct, deducir reasonable, razonable the kindness, la bondad country(nation), el pais, la nación country (fields), campo colony, la colonia following, siguiente Republic, la República Chili, Chile according to, segun inhabitants, los habitantes size, el tamaño area, la superficie kilometre, el kilómetro square, cuadrado mile, la milla to compare, comparar Europe, la Europa extent, la extensión total, el total to include, incluir [patria the mother country, la madre possessions, las posesiones inspired, inspirado Tevangelio. motive, el motivo to preach the Gospel, predicar el

EXERCISE XXXV.

I. We are now at the last exercise of the Grammar; is there any thing you would like to ask? 2. I should like to know the difference between todavía and aun—it seems that both words mean yet. You are right. 3. Do not forget that never can be translated by nunca or jamás: for example: "Never, never shall I write it;" use nunca to translate the first never, and jamás for the second. 4. I understand that when both words are used nunca must come first. In this letter I have just received the word jamás is used as ever. 5. Yes, that is all right, and the translation is, "Have you ever seen that opera?" Is that all you wish to ask? 6. Well, in this letter my friend says: "In Madrid, to-day the heat has been really excessive, owing to the want of air, but there is hope that a summer cloud will come to refresh the atmosphere with some beneficent showers. 7. And he says here, "The maximum temperature rose to 33°." I cannot understand what he means by complaining about the heat when he says it was 33°. 8. Well, you are thinking of Fahrenheit, and we use the Centigrade thermometer. 9. Now I see, but how can I know what 33° means. I always thought that all the world used the Fahrenheit thermometer, and that the Centigrade was only a curiosity. 10. But you were very much mistaken,—the fact is that most of the world uses the Centigrade. In this thermometer the freezing-point is at zero, and the boiling-point at 100. II. To convert Centigrade into Fahrenheit, multiply by o. divide by 5, and add 32. If you do this with the 33° Centigrade you will find that it is not surprising that your friend feels the heat in Madrid. 12. I have made the calculation, and find that it would be about 91° Fahrenheit, and that in the month of July; what will it be in August? Who knows? 13. By the Fahrenheit thermometer the freezing-point is 32° and the boiling-point 212°. To convert Fahrenheit into Centigrade deduct 32, multiply by 5, and divide by 9. 14. Now that I understand it, I prefer the Centigrade, it seems more reasonable. I also prefer it. 15. Will you kindly tell me in what countries Spanish is spoken? Here in Europe it is the language of Spain and her Colonies, and in Africa it is spoken in the Spanish Possessions. 16. It is also the language of eighteen Republics in America. 17. What is the size of those countries? The Argentine Republic is the largest, it has an area of 1.130.070 square miles (2,952,545 square kilometres), Mexico 761,097 square miles, Bolivia 708,195, Peru 679,000, and the other Republics are all large compared with the countries of Europe. 18. What is the total extent of all these Spanish-speaking countries? Over 5,048,500 square miles (13,077,620 square kilometres), and the total number of inhabitants is more than 52,000,000. This does not include the mother country, Spain, and her Colonies and Possessions, with about 25,000,000 inhabitants. 19. How many people are there in the world who speak Spanish? 20. There are approximately 100,000,000. 21. I can see now that the Spanish Empire was enormous. Can you tell me how long it lasted? Over three hundred years. 22. The great Spanish conquerors were inspired by three motives, to preach the Gospel, to obtain glory, and to find gold.

READING EXERCISES IN SPANISH.

[Two quotations from the famous "El Criterio," by the great Spanish philosopher, Don Jaime Balmés, whose works are read in all Spanish-speaking countries.]

1. Ventajas de la atención e inconvenientes de su falta.

Un espiritu atento multiplica sus fuerzas de una manera increible; aprovecha el tiempo atesorando siempre caudal de ideas; las percibe con más claridad y exactitud; y finalmente las recuerda con más facilidad, a causa de que con la continua atención estas se van colocando naturalmente en la cabeza de una manera ordenada.

Los que no atienden sino flojamente, pasean su entendimiento por distintos lugares a un mismo tiempo; aquí reciben una impresión, allí otra muy diferente, acumulan cien cosas inconexas que lejos de ayudarse mutuamente para la aclaración y retención, se confunden, se embrollan y se borran unas a otras. No hay lectura, no hay conversación, no hay espectáculo, por insignificantes que parezcan, que no nos puedan instruir en algo. Con la atención notamos las preciosidades y las recogemos; con la distracción dejamos quiza caer al suelo el oro y las perlas como cosa baladí.

VOCABULARY FOR ABOVE.

Ventajas, advantages atención, attentión inconvenientes, disadvantages falta, lack espiritu, mind atento, attentive fuerzas, strength increible, incredible aprovecha, avails atesorando, treasuring caudal, wealth recuerda, remembers colocando, placing

atienden, from atender, to attend flojamente, carelessly entendimiento, understanding ayudarse, to help each other embrollan, from embrollar, to entangle borran, from borrar, to efface caer al suelo, to fall to the ground oro, gold perlas, pearls cosa, thing baladi, worthless.

2. Fuerza de la voluntad.

El hombre tiene siempre un gran caudal de fuerzas sin emplear; y el secreto de hacer mucho, es acertar a explotarse a si mismo. Para convencerse de esta verdad basta considerar cuanto se multiplican las fuerzas del hombre que se halla en aprieto: su entendimiento es más

capaz y penetrante, su corazón más osado y emprendedor. su cuerpo más vigoroso: ¿ v esto por qué? ¿ se crean acaso nuevas fuerzas? no ciertamente: sólo se despiertan, se ponen en acción, se aplican a un objeto determinado. ¿Y cómo se logra esto? El aprieto aguijonea la voluntad, y esta desplega, por decirlo así, toda la pleni ud de su poder: quiere el fin con intensidad y viveza, manda con energía a todas las facultades que trabajen por encontrar los medios a propósito, y por emplearlos una vez encontrados; y el hombre se asombra de sentirse otro, de ser capaz de llevar a cabo lo que en circunstancias ordinarias le pareciera del todo imposible.

Lo que sucede en extremos apurados, debe enseñarnos el modo de aprovechar y multiplicar nuestras fuerzas en el curso de los negocios comunes: regularmente, para lograr un fin, lo que se necesita es voluntad: voluntad decidida. resuelta, firme, que marche a su objeto sin arredrarse por obstáculos ni fatigas. Las más de las veces, no tenemos verdadera voluntad, sino veleidad; quisieramos, mas no queremos, quisieramos, si no fuese preciso salir de nuestra habitual pereza, arrostrar tal trabajo, superar tales obstáculos, pero no queremos alcanzar el fin a tanta costa; empleamos con flojedad nuestras facultades, y desfallecemos a la mitad del camino.

VOCABULARY.

Fuerza, strength voluntad, will caudal, store acertar, to succeed [one's self si mismo, one's self basta, enough, it is sufficient aprieto, difficulty entendimiento, his unders'andcorazón, heart [ing osado, daring emprendedor, aggressive cuerpo, body acaso, berhabs despiertan, awakens logra, attained aguijonea, stimulates, rouses la voluntad, the will desplega, unfolds por decirlo asi, so to say plenitud, fulniss manda, commands

medios, means asombra, astonishes [being sentirse otro, to feel like another llevar a cabo, to carry out explotarse, to make the most of lo que sucede, what happens extremos apurados, extreme diffienseñarnos, teach us [culties] aprovechar, to avail oneself en el curso, in the course [ness negocios comunes. ordinary busilograr un fin, to obtain a purpose resuelta, resolute arredrarse, without being terrifatigas, fatigue veleidad, inconstancy pereza, laziness arrostrar, to encounter superar, to overcome alcanzar, to reach, to attain con flojedad, with wakness facultades, faculties desfallecemos, we fulter.

VOCABULARY.

Words occurring in the English Exercises for translation into Spanish.

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS.

m. = masculine
f. = feminine
s. = substantive
adj. = adjective
pron. = pronoun
adv. = adverb

conj. = conjunction prep. = preposition pers. = personal poss. = possessive p.p. = past participle

Note.—Numbers are omitted. For Cardinals see p. 27, for Ordinals, p. 30. N.B.—The *irregular verbs* will be found fully conjugated on pages 67—96.

A

a, un (f. una) able, v., poder abolish, abolir about (nearly), casi, cerca de abroad, en el extranjero absence, ausencia, f. absolutely, absolutamente absolve, v., absolver accept, aceptar accompany, acompañar account, cuenta, f. accountant, contador, m. accuse, acusar ache, v., doler acre, acre, m. act, s., acto, m. act, v., representar, hacer actor, actor, m. actress, actriz, f. acute, adj., agudo add, añadir adhere, v., adherir admiral, almirante, m. admire, admirar

admit, admitir advance (in), por adelantado advert, v., advertir advice, consejo, aviso, m. afraid (to be), tener miedo after, después afternoon, tarde, f. again, otra vez against, contra age, edad, f. how old are you? ¿qué edad tiene Vd.? of age, mayor de edad agent, agente, m. ago, hace agree, v., convenir, acordar agreement, convenio, concorair, aire, m. alike, semejante alive, vivo, viviente, animado all, adj., todo almost, casi almost all, casi todos along, a lo largo also, adv., también alteration, alteración, cambio (125)

although, aunque, no obstante always, siempre a.m., a.m. amateur, aficionado, -da ambition, ambición, f. America, América, f. American, s., americano, ameriamount, importe, m. ancestor, antepasado, -da and, y, (before i or hi, e) animal, animal, m. another, otro, otra answer, s., contestación, respuesta, f. answer, v., contestar, responder anxious, ansioso, inquieto any, algo, alguno anybody, alguién, alguno apart, aparte applaud, aplaudir apple, manzana, f. apply, aplicar appoint, nombrar approve, v., aprobar architect, arquitecto, m. arm (limb), brazo, m., (weapon) arma, f. armchair, sillón, m. arrive, llegar art. arte. m. artist, el or la artista as, como; as...as, tan...como as soon as, tan pronto como ascend, v., ascender ashamed (to be), tener vergüenza Asia, el Asia ask, pedir, preguntar associate, v., asociar assure, asegurar astonish, sorprender astronomy, astronomia, f. at, prep., a, en at home, en casa; at least, a lo menos

attend, v., atender attention, atención, f. attentively, atentamente audience (spectators), auditorio, aunt, tia, f. [m. author, autor, autora autumn, otoño, m. awake, v., despertar away (absent), ausente

B

back, adv., de vuelta the back, la espalda bacon, tocino, m. bad, adj., malo, mala badly, adv., malamente, mal bag, saco, m. balance sheet, el balance ball (dance), baile, m. bathe, v., bañarse be, ser, estar beard, barba, f. beautiful, hermoso, bonito because, porque bed, cama, lecho bedroom, dormitorio, cuarto de dormir, alcoba bee, abeja, f. beef, carne de vaca, f. beer, cerveza, f. before (of place), delante; (of time) antes begin, comenzar, empezar believe, pensar, creer belong, v., pertenecer benefactor, bienhechor, m. besides, además best, adj., el, la or lo mejor bet, v., apostar better, mejor better, adv., más bien between, entre bicycle, bicicleta, f. big, grande bird, pájaro, ave (el ave, las aves)

bite, v., morder black, negro blame, v., culpar; s., culpa f. blind, adj., ciego blindly, ciegamente blotting-paper, papel secante, m. blue, azul boat, bote, m. boil, v., hervir bolt, cerrojo, m. book, libro, m. bookshop, libreria, f. boot, bota, f. bootmaker, zapatero, m. born (to be), nacer both, ambos, ambas bottle, botella, f. bought, b.b., comprado bouquet, ramillete, m. bow, v., saludar box, caja, f., (in theatre) palco, boy, muchacho, niño, m. branch (of tree), rama, f., (line of business) ramo, m., (branch of a business) sucursal, f., (of railway) ramal, m. brave, valiente Brazil, el Brasil bread, pan, m. break, v., romper, quebrar breakfast, desayuno, almuerzo breakfast, v., desayunar, almorbreathe, v., alentar Zar bridge, puente, m. briefly, brevemente brilliant, brillante bring, traer broad, ancho brother, hermano, m. brother-in-law, cuñado, m. Brussels, Bruselas build, edificar, construir building, edificio, m. built. b.b., construido burn, v., quemar

burst, v., reventar
bury, enterrar, sepultar
business, negocio, asunto
busy, ocupado
but, pero, (in negative sentence)
sino
butter, manteca, f.
button, botón, m.
buy, comprar
by, prep., por, a, en; by the by,
de paso; by day, de día; by
degrees, poco a poco; by no
means (adv.), de ningún
modo

C

cabbage, col, f., berza, f., repollo, m. call, v., llamar; (visit) pasar a ver, visitar calm, adj., calma, f. can, v., poder, saber canal, canal, m. captain, capitán, m. card, tarjeta, f. playing cards, los naipes carefully, cuidadosamente carnival, carnaval, m. carpet, alfombra f. carriage, carruaje, coche, m. carry, llevar, traer case, caso, m. castle, castillo, m. catch, v., coger, apresar cathedral, catedral, f. cause, v., causar cautiously, prudentemente cease, cesar cellar, cueva, (wine -) bodega, f. centigrade, centigrado, m. centime, centimo, m. certain, cierto certainly, ciertamente, seguramente chair, silla, f.

change, v., cambiar charity, caridad, f. Charles, Carlos cheap, barato cheaper, más barato cheese, queso, m. cherry, cereza, guinda, f. child, niño, niña Chili, Chile chocolate, chocolate, m. choose, elegir, escoger church, iglesia, f. citizen, ciudadano, m. city, ciudad, f. class, clase, f. clean, adj., limpio, limpia clean, v., limpiar clear, claro, clara clear away, quitar la mesa clerk, dependiente, empleado clever, hábil client, cliente, m. climate, clima, m. clock, reloj (de pared), m. close, v., cerrar clothes, la ropa, el ropaje club, club, m. clumsiness, torpeza, f. coast, costa, f. coat, casaca. f. coffee, café, m. cold, adj., frio, fria I am cold, tengo frio it is cold, hace frio to have a cold, estar resfriado collar, cuello, m. colleague, colega, m. collect (books, &c.), coleccionar, (debts), cobrar collection, colección, f. colonel, coronel, m. colony, colonia, f. colour, color, m. come, venir come down, bajár

come home, venir a casa come in, entrar come up, subir comfort, comodidad, f. comfortable, cómodo commence, v., comenzar companion, compañero, -a company, limited, compañia anonima (or limitado) compare, v., comparar compel, forzar, obligar compete, v., competir complete, completar complain, quejar conceive, concebir concerning, tocante concert, concierto, m. concession, concesión, f. concrete, adj., concreto condition, condición, f. conditional, condicional conduct, conducta, f. conduct, v.. conducir confer, conferir confess, v., confesar conjugation, conjugación f. consent, consentimiento, m. consent, v., consentir consider, v., considerar consist, consistir console, v., consolar continent, continente, m. continue, v., seguir contribute, contribuir convenient, conveniente, comoconversation, conversación, f. convert, v., convertir copper, cobre, m. coral, coral, m. correct, v., corregir correspond, corresponder correspondence, correspondencia, f. cost, v., costar count, v., contar

country, pais, m.; nación, f.; (as opposed to town) campo countryman, paisano, compatriota, m. courage, valor, m. court, tribunal, m. cousin, primo, prima cream, creama, f. cross, cruz, f. cross, v., cruzar, atravesar cruel, cruel cultivate, v., cultivar cure, v. curar; the - , la cura Custom House, aduana, f. cut, v., cortar

dance, baile, m.; v., bailar dancer, bailarin, bailarina danger, peligro, m. dare, osar, atreverse daughter, hija, f. dawn, v., amanecer dawn, day-break, el amanecer day, el día, m. dead. muerto deal (a great), mucho dear, caro, cara deceive, engañar December, diciembre decide, decidir declare, declarar deduct, deducir deep, profundo defend, defender defer, v., deferir degree, grado, m. delay, retrasar, detener demolish, demolir demonstrate, v., demostrar deny, v., negar department, departamento, in. depend, v., depender deputy, diputado, m. deserve, merecer

Spanish Grammar S .- T.

desire, v., desear destruction, destrucción, f. details, detalles dictionary, diccionario, m. die, morir differ, v., diferir difference, diferencia, f. difficult, difícil difficulty, dificultad, f. digest, v., digerir dine, comer dining-room, comedor, m. dinner, comida, f. director, director, m. disagreeable, desagradable disappoint, frustrar, dar chasco disappointment, chasco, m. disaster, desastre, m. discover, v., descubrir discreet, discreto, prudente disposed, dispuesto dissolve, v., disolver distance, distancia, f. divide, dividir do, hacer doctor, médico, doctor, m. dog, perro, m. door, puerta, f. double, doble doubt, v., dudar dozen, docena, f. draw, v., dibujar drawer, s., la gaveta, el cajón drawing (of lottery), sorteo drawing-room, salón, m. dream, v., soñar dress, vestido, m. dress, v., vestir drizzle, v., lloviznar dry, adj., seco duchess, duquesa, f. duke, duque, m. dumb. mudo durable, durable during, durante

duty, deber, m. dye, v., teñir

E

each, cada each, pron., cada uno, cada una each other, el uno el otro earlier, más temprano early, temprano earth, tierra, f. easier, más fácil easy, fácil effect, v., efectuar effort, esfuerzo, m. egg, huevo, m. eight, ocho eighty, ochenta either, pron., el uno o el otro elder, eldest, el mayor, la mayor elect, v., elegir elephant, elefante, m. eleven, once eleventh, onceno, oncena élite, elegante eloquent, elocuente emigrant, emigrante, m. f. emperor, emperador, m. employment, empleo, m. empress, emperatriz, f. enamel, esmalte, m. end, fin, m. endeavour, v., intentar enemy, enemigo, enemiga engineer, ingeniero, m. England, Inglaterra, f. English, adj., inglés Englishman, un inglés, m. enjoy, gozar enjoy oneself, divertirse enormously, enormemente enough, bastante enter, entrar entreat, v., rogar envelope, sobre, m

escape, v., escapar establish, establecer estate, propiedad, f. Europe, Europa, f. evening, tarde, f. ever, siempre every, adj., cada uno everybody, todo el mundo, todos everywhere, por todas partes examine, examinar example, ejemplo, m. excel, sobresalir except, excepto, salvo exception, excepción, f. excess, exceso, m. excitement, excitación, f. exercise, ejercicio, tema, m. exhibition, exposición. f. exist, existir expect, esperar expectation, esperanza, f. expenditure, desembolso, gasto expensive, costoso experience, experiencia, f. explain, explicar explanation, explicación, f. express train, tren expreso extend, v., extender extended, extendido extraordinary, extraordinario eye, ojo, m.

F

fact, hecho, m.
factory, fábrica, f.
fair, adj., rubio, rubia
faithful, fiel
fall, v., caer
false, falso
fame, fama, f.
family, familia, f.
famous, famoso
far, lejos
farther on, más alla

fast, rápido; (watch) adelantado fat, adj., gordo father, padre, m. favour, favor, m. favourite, favorito, favorita festival, fiesta f. fetch. v., traer few, pocos, algunos field, campo, m. fierce, feroz fifth, quinto fifty, cincuenta fill, llenar find, v., hallar, encontrar fine, adj., fino, bello, hermoso it is fine (weather), hace buen tiempo finish, v., acabar fire, fuego, m. firm, casa, f. firm, adj., firme first, primero, m. first thing, la primera cosa fish (caught), pescado, m.; (in water), pez, m. fish, v., pescar fishing, la pesca five, cinco flat, adj., plano, llano a flat, un piso fleet, flota, f. flower, flor, f. fluently, fluidez, f. fly, v., volar fog, niebla, f. follow, v., seguir following, siguiente fond of, v., gustar food, alimento, m., vitualla, f.; (for animals), pasto foolish, tonto, tonta for, por, para forbid, v., prohibir force, v., forzar forehead, frente, f.

foreign, extranjero, extranjera forest, bosque, m. forget, v., olvidar forgive, v., perdonar fork, tenedor, m. form, forma, f.; v., formar fortnight, una quincena fortune, fortuna, f. forty, cuarenta fountain-pen, pluma-tintero four, cuatro franc, franco, m. France, Francia, f. freeze, helar French, francés frequently, frequentemente fresh, fresco friend, amigo, m.f. frighten, v., asustar, espantar frock-coat, levita, f. from, de frontier, frontera, f. fruit, fruta, f. fruit-tree, frutal, m. full, lleno furnished, amueblado furniture, muebles, m.pl future (in), porvenir, m., futuro

G

gain, v., ganar gallery, galeria, f. garden, jardín, m. gardener, jardínero, m. general, adj. & s., general generally, generalmente Geneva, Ginebra gentle, suave gentleman, caballero, señor George, Jorje get, ganar get better, mejorarse get ready, preparar get up, levantarse gird, v., ceñir girl, muchacha, f. give, dar give back, devolver glass, vaso, m. glass of water, un vaso de agua glass of wine, una copa de vino window-glass, vidrio, cristal, m. looking-glass, espejo, m. eve-glass, lente, m.f. glorious, glorioso, gloriosa gloves, guantes go, ir, andar, marchar go back, volver go down, bajar, descender to go home, ir a casa, go out, salir go up, subir gold, oro, m. good, bueno, buena good way, buen modo goods, mercaderias. f,, géneros, m., mercancias, f. govern, v., gobernar government, gobierno, m. governess, aya, institutriz, f. grammar, gramática, f. grandfather, abuelo, m. grape, uva, f. grass, hierba, f. graze, v. apacentar great, grande Greek, griego, m.f. green, verde grind, v., moler grow dark, v., anochecer grow rich, enriquecerse guarantee, v., garantizar guard (railway), guardia, m. guess, v., adivinar, acertar guitar, guitara, f.

H

hail, granizo. m

hail, v., granizar hair, cabello, pelo, m. half, adj., medio, mitad hand, mano, f. handkerchief, pañuelo, m. handsome, bello, hermoso, m. happen, suceder, acaecer happy, feliz, dichoso harbour, puerto, m. hard, duro hardly, apenas harp, el arpa, pl. las arpas harvest, cosecha, f. haste (make), dése prisa hat, sombrero, m. hate, v., odiar, aborrecer hatred. odio, m. have, haber, tener, poseer have to, tener que he, él head, cabeza, f. headache, dolor de cabeza headmaster, principal, m. health, salud, f. hear, oir, entender heard, p.p., oido hearing, oyendo Heaven, cie.o, m. heavily (of rain), a cántaros hen, gallina, f. Henry, Enrique, m. her, pers. pron., ella, la her, poss. adj., su, sus here, aqui, aca here it is, aqui está herring, arenque, m. hers, el suyo, la suya, los suvos, las suvas, el (la, los) de ella hesitate, vacilar high, alto, sublime him, él, a él himself, él mismo hire, v., arrendar, alquilar his, adj su

his, pron., suyo, suya, de él a friend of his, un amigo suyo **history**, historia, f. holidays, vacaciones, f.pl. home (at), en casa hook (fishing-), anzuelo, m. hope, esperanza, f. hope, v., esperar horse, caballo, m. to go on horseback, montar a caballo, cabalgar horse-hair, crin, f. hospital, hospital, m. hot, caliente it is hot, hace calor I feel hot, tengo mucho calor hotel, hotel, m., fonda, f. hour, hora, f. half-an-hour, una media hora an hour and a half, una hora y media a quarter of an hour, un cuarto de hora house, casa, f. how, cómo how many, cuantos how much, cuánto how to employ, como emplear hundred, cien, ciento hundreds, centenares hungry, to be, tener hambre hunt, v., cazar hurt, v., lastimar husband, esposo, marido, m.

I

I, yo. It is I, soy yo ice, hielo, m. ice-cream, helado, m. idea, idea, f. ideal, ideal if, si ill, enfermo, enferma illness, enfermedad, f., mal illustrated, ilustrado

imperative, imperativo imperfect, imperfecto, m. imperial, imperial important, importante impression, impresión, f incident, incidente, m.,... include, v., incluir increase, v., aumentar independent, independiente indicate, indicar industrious, laborioso influence, influencia, f. inhabitant, habitante, m. ink, tinta, f. inkstand, tintero, m. insist, insistir 🥂 inspector, inspector, m. inspire, inspirar instant, instante, m. in an instant, al instante the 5th instant, el 5 del corriinstructive, instructivo ente instrument, instrumento Sheet M. intend, tener la intención .gmr. interesting, interesante interval, intervalo, m. interview, entrevista, f. into, en, dentro to go into the garden, ir al iardin introduce, introducir permit me to introduce to you Mr. —, permitame presentar a usted el Sri invent, inventar inventor, inventor, m. invite, invitar, convidar Ireland, Irlanda, f. Irish, irlandés

irregular, irregular

island, isla, f.

it is I, soy yo

is it yours? ¿ es de V.?

I know it. lo sé

it, pers. pron., él, ella, él ello, lo,

Italian, italiano, a Italy, Italia

J

January, enero, m.
Japanese, japones, japonesa
jewel, joya, f.
journey, viaje, m.
joy, alegria, f.
judge, juez, m.
jury, jurado, m.
just, justo
just, to have, acabar de
just as, al momento que
justly, justamente

K

key, llave, f.; (of book) clave, f.
kill, matar
kilometer, kilómetro, m.
kind, adj., amable, gentil
be kind enough to, tenga la bondad
kind, s., clase, especie, f.
king, rey, m.
knee, rodilla, f.
knife, cuchillo, m.
know (to be acquainted with), coñocer; (to be aware of, or to know by hearsay) saber (ir.)
know how, saber como
knowledge, conocimiento, m.

L

lace, encaje, m.
lack, v., faltar
lady, señora, f.
young lady, señorita, f.
landau, landau, m.
language, lengua, f., idioma, m.
large (bulky), gran, grande
last, adj., último
last night, anoche
last week, la semana pasada

last year, el año pasado late, tarde, atrasado I am late, estoy tarde it is getting late, se hace tarde it is late, es tarde laugh (at), reir de law, ley, f. lawn-tennis, lawn-tennis, m. lawyer, abogado, m. lazy, holgazan lean, v., apoyarse learn, v., aprender lease, arrendamiento, m. least, lo menos at least, a lo menos leave, v. (something), dejar, (a place) dejar, (depart), partir, left, adj., izquierda lend, prestar length, largura, f. less, menos lesson, lección, f. let (hire), alquilar letter, carta, f. library, biblioteca, f. light, v., encender lighten, v., relampaguear lightning, relampago, m. a flash of lightning, un relamlike, v., gustar, querer do you like? ¿le gusta? like, como, adj. line, linea, f. list, lista, f. listen, escuchar litre, litro, m. little, adj., pequeño; a little, adv., un poco live (dwell), habitar, (to be alive) vivir lock, v., cerrar con llave lodging, habitación, f.

last month, el mes pasado

London, Londrés, m. long, adj., largo long, adv., mucho tiempo longing to (I am), estoy deseoso

look, v., mirar look at, mire to look for, buscar loose, v., soltar lose, perder lottery, loteria, f. love, v. amar love, s., amor, m. low, bajo luck, suerte, f. lucrative, provechoso luggage, el equipaje, m. lunch, s., almuerzo, m. to have lunch, almorzar, merendar

machine, máquina, f. mad, adj., loco Madam, señora, f. madman, loco, m. make, hacer man, hombre manage, administrar manager, gerente, m. mantel-piece, chimenea, f. many, muchos many thanks, muchas gracias market, mercado, m. marry (wed), casar, (to get married) casarse Marseilles, Marsella marvellous, maravilloso master, amo May, s., mayo, m. mayor, alcalde, m. me, me, vo measure, v., medir meat, carne, f.

meet, v., encontrar

melt, v., derretir member, miembro, m. memory, memoria, f. mention, mencionar merchant, comerciante, m. metre, metro, m. midnight, media noche mile, milla, f. milk, leche, f. million, millón mine, poss. pron., el mio, la mia, los mios, las mias a friend of mine, un amigo mio mine, s., mina, f. miner, minero, m. mineral, mineral, m. minute, minuto, m. misprint, s., falta de impresión Miss, señorita miss, echar de menos mistake, error, equivocación money, dinero month, mes, m. monthly, adj., mensual; adv., mensualmente moon, luna, f. more, más no more, nada más, no más the more ... the more, tanto más...cuanto más more than, más de most, lo más, (most part) la mayor parte mother, madre, f. motive, motivo, m. motor-car, automóvil, m. mourning, luto move, v., mover Mr., Señor Mr. So-and-so, Sr. Fulano de Mrs., Señora de Mrs. So-and-so, Señora Fulana much, mucho Ide tal as much as, tanto como so much, tanto too much. demasiado

multiply, multiplicar
music, música, f.
musician, músico, m.
must, tener que
mutton, carnero, m.
my, mi

nail, s., un clavo

N

name, nombre, m. narrow, estrecho, angosto nation, nación, f. near, cerca necessary, necesario need, v., necesitar neglect, v., desatender neighbour, vecino, neighbourhood, vecindario neither, indef. adj. & pron., ni uno ni otro nephew, sobrino, 111. never, nunca, jamás new, nuevo, nueva news, noticias, f. newspaper, periódico, m. next, próximo next week, la semana que next year, el año que viene nice, gentil niece, sobrina, f. night, noche, f. last night, anoche nightfall, el anochecer nil, nada nine, nueve nineteen, diez y nueve no. adv., no no one, indef. adj. or pron., nadie nobody, nadie noise, ruido, m. none, ninguno noon, medio dia nor, ni nose, nariz, f.

not, no
not at all, de ningún modo
note, nota, f.
nothing, nada
nothing more, nada más
notice, note, v., notar
novel, novela, f.
now, ahora
number, número, m.

0

obev, obedecer oblige, v., complacer, obligar obliging, atento obtain, obtener o'clock, hora, f. what o'clock (time) is it? ¿que hora es? of. de of course, por supuesto offer, oferta, f. offer, v., ofrecer office, oficina, f. officer, oficial, m. often, amenudo oil, aceite, m. oil painting, cuadro al olio old, viejo, vieja; antiguo, a how old are you? ¿que edad tiene V.? omit, omitir on, sobre, en once, una vez one, uno, una only, sólo, solamente; (the only one) el único open, v., abrir opinion, opinión, f. opportunity, oportunidad, f. opposite, en frente orange, naranja order, orden, f. order, v., ordenar, mandar other, otro, otra ought, v., deber

our, nuestro
ours, el nuestro, la nuestra
out (to be), haber salido
he is out, ha salido
over, más de
overcoat, sobretodo, m.
owe, deber
owl, buho, m.

P

page, página, f. paint, v., pintar painting, pintura, f. pair, par, m. paper, papel, m.; (newspaper) periódico, diario parcel, paquete, m. Paris, Paris Parliament, Parlamento, m. part, parte, f. particular, particular, detalle, m. particularly, particularmente partner, socio, m. party (social); tertulia, reunión, f. pass, v., pasar past, pasado pavement, acera, f. pay, v., pagar peach, melocotón; (S. America) durazno pear, pera, f. peasant, labriego, paisano pebble, cascajo, m. pen, pluma, f. pencil, lápiz, m. people, gente, f. perceive, percebir perhaps, tal vez perish, perecer permission, permisión, f. person, persona, f. Peru, el Peru Peruvian, peruano, a pervert, pervertir

photograph, fotografia, f. pianist, pianista piano, piano, m. picture, cuadro, m. pity, lástima, f. place, lugar [pieza play, s., el juego; (theatre) la play, v., jugar; (an instrument) pleasant, agradable [tocar please, sírvase please, contentar, agradar pleased, contento, satisfecho pleasure, el gusto, placer plural, plural p.m., tarde pocket, bolsillo, m. pocket-book, cartera, portamonedas policeman, policia, agente poor, pobre popular, popular populous, populoso portrait, retrato, m. Portugal, Portugal position, posición, f. possess, poseer possible, posible post, v., echar al correo postcard, postal, s. postman, cartero pound, libra, f. pour out, v., verter poverty, pobreza powerful, poderoso practical, práctico practically, prácticamente practice, práctica, f. practise, v., practicar praise, alabanza, m. preach, predicar precisely, precisamente prefer, preferir prepare, preparar present, adj., presente present day, hoy dia

present, v., presentar present, s., regalo, m. presently, en seguida preside, presidir pretend, pretender pretty, bonito, hermoso prince, principe princess, princesa principal, principal prize, premio, m. produce, v., producir **profession**, profesión, f. professor, profesor, m. proficiency, proficiencia profit, ganancia, provecho progress, v., progresar protect, protejer proud, orgulloso prove, v., probar provisions, provisiones prudence, prudencia public, público pull down, derribar punctually, puntualmente punish, castigar pupil, discípulo put, poner

Q

quality, calidad
quarrel, s., riña,
quarrel, v., reñir
quarter, cuarto, m.
a quarter of an hour, cuarto
de hora
queen, reina

question, s.. pregunta.
 it is a question, es una cuestión
quiet, v., sosegar
quite, enteramente

P

racket, raqueta rain, lluvia

rain, v., llover ranch, estancia, f. rare, raro rather, adj., más bien, tal vez, algo read, v., leer read, p.p., leido reading, levendo ready, listo, presto really, verdaderamente reason, razón, f. receive, recibir recently, recientemente: -born. reciente, recién, nacido recommend, v., recomendar red, rojo; reddish, rojizo reduce, reducir refer, v., referir reflect, refleccionar refuse, rehusar regret, sentir reign, v., reinar rejoice (at), regocijar relate, relatar rely, contar remain, quedar remember, acordar renew, v., renovar repeat, repetir repent, v., arrepentirse replace, reemplazar reply, v., responder reply, s., contestación reprove, v., reprobar republic, república require, v., requerir reservoir, depósito rest, v., descansar the rest. lo demás result, resultado, m. retain, v., retener retire, retirar return, v., volver, regresar return ticket, billete de ida v vuelta

reward, s., recompensa reward, v., recompensar ribbon, cinta, f. rich, rico; to grow rich, enriqueride, v., dar un paseo en coche, en bicicleta, a caballo, en automóvil right (to be), tener razón right (opposed to left), la derecha ripe, maduro rise, v., levantar, elevar river, rio, m. robbery, robo, estafa room, cuarto, m., habitación, pieza, f. rose, rosa, f. rose-tree, rosal royal, real ruin, ruina rule, regla, f. rule, v., regir run, v., correr Russia, Rusia Russian, ruso, rusa rusty, adj., mojoso

S

sad, triste sail, vela sail, v., velar, partir, salir sailor, marinero, m. salt, sal, f. same, el mismo, la misma, lo mismo satisfied, satisfecho Saturday, sábado saw, v., aserrar say, decir scarce, raro scarcely, a penas scheme, s.. proyecto school, escuela scissors, tijeras

scold, regañar scratch out, tachar sea, mar, m. &f. seal, s., sello sea-sick, mareado seaside, la orilla del mar, el lado del mar season, estación, f. seated, sentado secret, adi., secreto see, percibir, ver seed, semilla, f. seem, parecer seen, visto sell, v., vender senate, senado send, enviar send for, mandar, buscar sense, juicio, m. servant, criado, criada serve, servir settle (in place), establecer seven, siete seventy, setenta several, varios, m.pl. Seville, Sevilla shade, sombra, f. share, s., acción, f.; (part), parte, porción, f. sharp, agudo she, ella sheet (of bed), sabana; (of paper) hoja, f. ship, buque, bote m. shirt, camisa, f. shop, tienda, f. shopkeeper, tendero, m. short, corto show, v., mostrar shower, chaparron. m. shut, v., cerrar side, lado, m. sight of (to lose), perder de vista signifies, significa signify, v., significar

silent, silencioso silent (to be), estar callado silk, seda, f. silver, plata, f. similar, semejante, parecido simple, sencillo, simple since, desde sing, cantar singer, cantor, cantatriz singular, singular sir, señor, (bl. señores) sister, hermana sit down, sentarse situated, situado six, seis size, tamaño, m. skate, patín skate, v., patinar sky, cielo, m. sleep, v., dormir slightest, lo más mínimo slipper, pantufla, f. slow (watch), atrasado slowly, lentamente. despacio small, pequeño, chiquito smell, v., oler snow, s., nieve snow, v., nevar so, así; not so...as, no tan...como so many, tantos, tantas society, sociedad, f. socks, calcetines, m.pl. soldier, soldado solicitor, procurador, m. solve, v., solver some, indef. adj., algunos some, pers. pron. (of it, of them), un poco something, alguna cosa something else, otra cosa sometimes, algunas veces son, hijo, m. song, canción, f. soon, pronto as soon as, tan pronto como

sorry, sentir so that, para que, a fin que soul, el alma sound, v., sonar south, sur. m. sovereign, soberano, m. Spain, España, f. Spanish, adj., español; s., espaspeak, hablar speech, discurso, m. spell, v., deletrear spend (money), gastar; spite of (in), a pesar de split, v., hender spoon, cuchara, f. sport, deporte, m. spot, s., lugar spring, primavera, f. square, cuadrado, m. squeeze, v,, apretar stain, mancha, f. staircase, escalera, m. stall, (in theatre) butaca stamp, sello, m. star, estrella, f. start, v., partir station, estación, f. stay, v., quedar steamboat, vapor, m. sterling (pound), libra esterlina stick (walking), bastón, m. still, adv., aun, todavía Stock Exchange, bolsa, f. stop, v., parar, pararse story, un cuento, una historia stout, adj., grueso straight, derecho straightforward, franco strain, v., colar stranger, forastero strawberry, fresa, f. straw hat, sombrero de paja, m. street, calle, f. strength, fuerza, f.

strike, (labour) huelga, f.; (the hour) dar strong, fuerte student, estudiante study, v., estudiar stumble, v., tropezar stupid, estupido subject, adj., sujeto; s., súbdito subjunctive, subjuntivo succeed (to be successful), tener exito; (to follow), suceder success, suceso, exito, m. such, tal, tales suddenly, de repente sufficient, suficiente sugar, azúcar, m. suggest, v., sugerir suit, v., convenir summer, verano, m. sun, sol, m. Sunday, domingo, m, sunshade, parasol, quitasol superior, superior supply, v., surtir suppose, suponer sure, seguro surprise, sorpresa, f. surprise, v., sorprender sweet, dulce swim. v., nadar Switzerland, Suiza systematically, sistematicamente

T

table, mesa. f.
take, tomar, llevar
take off, v., quitar
talent, talento, m.
tall, alto, m.
taste, v., gustar
tea, té, m.
teach, enseñar

tease, v., molestar telegram, telegrama, m. telegraphy, telegrafia, s.f. wireless, sin hilos tell, contar, decir, recontar ten, diez tense, tiempo terms, condiciones, f.bl. Thames, Támeses, m. than, que thank, v., agradecer thank you, gracias that, adj., eso, aquello that, conj., que that, pron., ese that's it. eso es the, el, la, lo the one, el uno, la una theatre, teatro, m. their, su theirs, su, de ellos them, les themselves, ellos mismos then, entonces there, alli, alla there is, there are, hay therefore, por esto these, adj., estos they, ellos, ellas thick, espeso, grueso, m. thin, adj., delgado thing, cosa, f. think, pensar, creer thirsty (to be), tener sed thirty, treinta thirty-one, treinta y uno this, adj., esto this, pron., esto this one, este, esta this time, esta vez those, adj., esos those, pron., esos thousand, mil; thousands of, millares de threaten, amenazar

three, tres thrifty, económico, m. thunder, v., tronar thunderstorm, tempestad Thursday, jueves, m. thus, así ticket, billete, boleto, m. ticket-office, taquilla tide, s., marea, f. tie, corbata, f. time, tiempo, m; (hour) hora, f. number of times, veces it is time, es tiempo time-table, horario, m. tired, cansado to. a toast, tostada, f toast, v., tostar tobacco, tabaco to-day, hoy together, juntos to-morrow, mañana to-night, esta noche too, demasiado tool, herramienta, f. toothache, dolor de muelas, m. total, total, m. towards, hacía towel, toalla, f. town, pueblo, villa, ciudad toy, juguete, m. trace, s., traza: v., seguir tradesman, tendero, m. train, s., tren, m. transfer, v., trasferir translate, traducir travel. v.. viajar treat, s., regalo; m. tree, árbol, m. tremble, v., temblar tropical, tropical trouble, s., molestia, f. trouble oneself, molestarse trousers, pantalón true, it is, es verdad

trunk, baul; m.
truth, verdad, f.
try, tratar, ensayar
Tuesday, martes
Turkish, turco, m.
twelfth, duodecimo, m.
twelve, doce
twelve o'clock, medio dia (midaay), media noche (midnight)
twice, dos veces
twist, v., torcer
two, dos

U

umbrella, paraguas, m. uncertain, incierto uncle, tio under, debajo understand, comprender undertaking, empresa, f. undoubtedly, sin duda unhappy, infeliz unless, a menos que until, hasta upset (something), derramar us, nosotros use, the, el uso use, v., emplear, usar used to, to be, v., soler useful, útil useless, inútil

V

value, valor
vegetable, legumbre, vegetal
ventilator, ventilador, m.
verb, verbo, m.
verify, v., comprobar
very, muy
very little, muy poco
very long, much tiempo
very much, muchísimo
very small, muy pequeño
very well, muy bien

Victoria, Victoria
victory, victoria, f.
village, aldea, f.
vinegar, vinagre, f.
violin, violin, m.
visit, s., visita, f.
visit, v., visitar
visiting-card, tarjeta de visita
vocabulary, vocabulario
voice, voz, f.
volume, tomo, m.
voyage, viaje, m.

W

waistcoat, chaleco, m. wait for, esperar wake up, despertar Wales, Gales walk, v., pasear, andar to take a walk, dar un paseo wall, s. (interior) pared, (exterior) muro walnut-tree, nogal walnut, nuez, f. want, v., desear warm, adj., calor; v., calentar warm oneself, to, calentarse warn, avisar, prevenir wash, v., lavar watch, s,, reloj, m. watchmaker, relojero, m. water, el agua, f., las aguas water, v., regar water-colour, acuarela, f. way, camino, m., ruta, f.; (manner) modo we, nosotros, nosotras wear, v., llevar weather, tiempo, m. it is fine weather, hace buen tiempo week, semana, f. weigh, pesar

well, adj., bien well-known, bien conocido well then, pues bien what! (exclamatory) | qué! what? (interr. adj.) cuáles what (that which), el que what is? ¿ qué es? when, cuando where, donde whether, si which, cuál, qué which, el cual, la cual, los cuales, las cuales which (rel. pron.), que white, blanco who? ¿quien? whole, the, todo, el todo whom, que whom? interr. pron. ¿ qué? whose (of whom, of which), de quien why, por qué wide, ancho wife, esposa, mujer, f. wild, salvage, fiero will you? ¿ quiere V.? win, v., ganar wind, s., viento wind, v., dar cuerda window, ventana, f. wine, vino, m. wing, el ala, f., las alas winter, invierno, m. winter, v., invernar wipe, v., limpiar wise, sabio, m. wish, deseo, m. wish for, desear with, con with me, conmigo without, sin (prep.), sin que conj.) woman, mujer, f. wonderful, maravilloso wood, madera, f.

word, s., palabra work, trabajo, m., obra, f. work, v., trabajar worker, trabajador workman, obrero, m. workshop, taller, m. world, mundo, m. worse, adj., peor worse, adv. peor worth, v., valer worth while, valer la pena wound, v., herir write, escribir writer, escritor, m. writing, escribiendo written, escrito wrong, to be, estar equivocado wrongly, malamente

Y

Taños year, año many years ago, hace muchos the new year, el año nuevo last year, el año pasado next year, el año próximo every year, cada año yellow, amarillo ves, si yesterday, aver yet, aun, todavía you, Vd., tu tí young, joven young lady, señorita, f. your, de Vd. yours, el, la, lo de Vd., los de

Z

zero, cero, m.

TO THE STUDENT.

Spanish Self-Taught can be recommended to the Student who has gone through this Grammar. It is an efficient method of gaining a practical acquaintance with a large vocabulary of words in common use, and facility of expression in every-day conversation. It supplies throughout an excellent system of Phonetic Pronunciation.

KEY

TO

SPANISH GRAMMAR SELF-TAUGHT

BY

ANDRÉS J. R. V. GARCÍA,

Examiner for the Chartered Institute of Secretaries,
Principal of the García School of Languages,
Author of the "Dictionary of Engineering
Terms," the "Dictionary of Railway
Terms," in Spanish-English
and English-Spanish,
&c., &c., &c.



SECOND EDITION. REVISED

LONDON:

E. MARLBOROUGH & Co., 51, Old Bailey, E.C. 4.

SPANISH GRAMMAR SELF-TAUGHT KEY TO THE EXERCISES.

[The Spanish sentences can be used for practice in reading, and also for exercise in re-translation into English, the result being checked by comparison with the original exercises in the Grammar.]

EJERCICIO I.

(On the Articles, pp. 12, 13)

I. El padre y la madre. 2. El papel y el lápiz. 3. El día y la hora. 4. El día, mes y año. 5. Los hombres y mujeres. 6. Unos minutos. 7. Unas plumas y lápices. 8. Una iglesia y una casa. 9. Unas casas y la iglesia. 10. La calle y la casa. 11. La pluma, la tinta y el papel. 12. El día, hora y minuto. 13. El rey y la reina. 14. Unos días y unas horas. 15. La calle, la casa y el cuarto.

EJERCICIO II.

(Gender of Substantives: Plural of Substantives and Adjectives: pp. 13-15.)

I. El sobrino del rey. 2. La sobrina de la reina. 3. Al hombre. 4. Al cuarto del niño. 5. A la estación. 6. Los libros del muchacho. 7. Los días de la semana. 8. La casa de su abuelo. 9. El reloj de la abuela. 10. El lápiz del niño. 11. El sobrino y la sobrina. 12. Los meses del año. 13. Del hotel a la estación. 14. De os jardines de la ciudad. 15. A la página del libro. 16. La madre de los niños. 17. El tio, la tia y la niña. 18. El cuñado y su tio. 19. La sob ina y la muchacha. 20. Su padre y madre.

EJERCICIO III.

(On the use of tener and usted; pp. 15, 16.)

r. i Habla Vd. el español? 2. Si, señorita, hablo un poco español. 3. i Habla su padre de Vd. francés? 4. No, señora, el habla español. 5. i Habla su abuela de Vd. muchas lenguas? 6. Ella habla español, inglés, francés e italiano. 7. i Señorita, habla Vd. italiano?

8. No, hablo ruso. 9. i Tiene Vd. cambio? 10. i Si, cuanto desea Vd.? 11. Gracias, hallo que tengo bastante. 12. i Ha almorzado Vd.? 13. No, voy a almorzar ahora. 14. Tenemos el desayuno y el almuerzo. 15. ¿ Qué es la diferencia? 16. El desayuno (el verdadero desayuno) es la primera cosa que se toma por la mañana. 17. ¿ Y el otro? 18. El otro se toma a las diez o a las once. 19. ¿ Qué toma Vd. por el almuerzo? 20. ¿ Cual? ¿ El desayuno? 21. Tomo una taza de café y nada más. 22. i Y por el otro? 23. Tocino o arroz y huevos, té, café o chocolate, pan y manteca y tostadas. 24. Tomo bananas fritos y huevos en lugar de tocino y huevos. 25. Toma Vd. azúcar v leche en su té? 26. Dos terrones de azúcar y muy poca leche.

EJERCICIO IV.

(On the use of haber; pp. 17, 18.)

I. i Ha visto Vd. al oficial? 2. Si, le ví en Francia. 3. ¿ Tiene Vd. vino o cerveza? 4. ¿ Ha visto Vd. mi libro? 5. Si, lo ví ayer sobre la mesa. 6. ; Ha visto su hermano a mi tio? 7. Le vio la semana pasada. 8. ¿ Cuándo vio Vd. la casa? 9. La ví esta mañana. 10. i Ha visto su esposa esa tienda? 11. No todavia, pero va mañana. 12. ¿ Ha visto Vd. mis llaves? 13. No, no las he visto. 14. ¿ Cuándo vió su padre al médico? 15. Le vio anoche. 16. ¿ Tiene Vd. algunas noticias esta mañana? 17. He visto el periódico pero no hay nada nuevo. 18. ¿ Ha recibido Vd. muchas cartas hoy? 19. No tantas como ayer. 20. Fué Vd. al teatro anoche? 21. Si señor, fuí con unos amigos.

EJERCICIO V.

(Ser and estar; Days, Months and Seasons: pp. 18-20.)

1. ¿ Es Vd. oficial? 2. Si señora, acabo de volver de Bélgica. 3. ¿ Cuándo viene el profesor? 4. Viene dos veces por semana. 5. ¿ Qué es ese señor (or caballero)? 6. El es abogado, y su hijo es médico. 7. ¿ Es rico? 8. Es muy rico: 9. Asia es más grande que Europa. 10. Los muchachos no son siempre industriosos. 11. Inglaterra es una isla y Cuba también es una isla. 12. ¿Es su amigo un contador? 13. No, el es un actor. 14. Su tio es un sastre. 15. ¿Es Vd. músico? 16. No señora, soy artista. 17. ¿Esta la puerta cerrada? 18. No, la puerta esta abierta, pero la ventana esta cerrada. 19. ¿Es la ventana grande? 20. No, la ventana es pequeña, pero la puerta es grande.

EJERCICIO VI.

(On the Declension of Nouns: pp. 20-22.)

I. Esa señora tiene una hermosa voz. 2. Dele esa canción, ella la canta muy bien. 3. Si, yo sé, la cantó antes que Vd. entró. 4. ¿ Es ese el libro de Vd.? 5. Si, lo compré esta mañana. 6. ¿ Costo mucho? 7. No tanto como Vd. pago por el suyo. 8. ¿ Cómo es eso? 9. Porque lo compré de un hombre que lo habia leido. 10. ¿Su hermana le gusta las joyas? II. No, ella prefiere encaje. 12. ¿ Se puede comprar encaje fino en España? 13. Sí, el encaje español es de mucho valor. 14. ¿ Estuvo Vd. en España el año pasado? 15. Si señorita, pasé unos tres meses en Sevilla y dos meses en Madrid. 16. ¿Se divirtio mucho? 17. Era magnífico, y pienso ir otra vez el año próximo. 18. Ha visitado Vd. algunos de los paises en que se habla español en America? 19. No todavia, pero espero algún día. 20. Acabo de volver de la Argentina, y el año próximo voy al Perú.

EJERCICIO VII.

(On the Demonstrative Adjectives : pp. 23, 24.)

I. ¿ Cuál de éstos dos libros es de Vd.? 2. Este, y ese es de Vd. 3. ¡ Qué bonita casa! 4. Sí, es la mejor de la ciudad. 5. ¿ Va Vd. a comprar ésta casa? 6. No, piden demasiado. 7. ¿ Cuantas casas tiene Vd.? 8. Tengo dos y quiero vender una. 9. Esta casa es nueva, esa es también nueva, pero aquella es vieja. 10. ¿ Es este rio muy largo? 11. Si, pasa por muchos paises. 12. ¿ Vive Vd. én el campo? 13. No, señora, vivo en la ciudad. 14. ¿ Donde vive su hermano? 15. Vive en Madrid. 16. ¿ Es ese un reloj de plata? 17. No señorita, es un reloj de oro. 18. ¿ Habla Vd. español o inglés? 19. Hablo ambas lenguas. 20. ¿ Compra su padre muchos caballos? 21. No, sólo compra dos. 22. ¿ Cuándo escribe Vd. sus ejercicios? 23. Todas las mañanas antes de alm rzar. 24. Yo escribo los mios por la tarde.

EJERCICIO VIII.

(Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns: pp. 24, 25.)

I. ¿ Tiene Vd. mi libro? 2. No señor, tengo el libro de mi hermano. 3. Esta es mi pluma, ¿ donde está la de Vd.? 4. La mia está en el otro cuarto. 5. ¿ Donde estaba Vd. anoche? 6. Estaba en el teatro con mi señora. 7. ¿ Habia mucha gente allí? 8. Si señora, estaba lleno. 9. ¿Vale ver la función? 10. Si, vale ver; es muy brillante. 11. ¿ Tomó Vd. un palco? 12. No señorita, teniamos butacas, es mucho más barato tomar una butaca. 13. ¿ Es su casa pequeña? 14. Si, señor, es muy pequeña. 15. ¿ Le gusta a Vd. una casa pequeña? 16. Si, por una familia pequeña. 17. ¿ Qué estación le gusta más? 18. Prefiero la primavera, pero también me gusta el verano, y el otoño, y aún el invierno si es seco. 19. ¿ Qué hace Vd. en el verano si hace mucho calor? 20. Voy a la orilla del mar. 21. ¿ Fué Vd. el año pasado? 22. Si señorita, y fué muy agradable. 23. ¿ Estuvo Vd. ausente mucho tiempo? 24. Solamente unas pocas semanas. 25. Creo que iré a España este año si es posible

EJERCICIO IX.

(Indefinite Adjectives: p. 26, 27.)

I. ¿ Donde esta la libreria ? 2. En la próxima calle. 3. ¿ Tiene Vd. un lápiz? 4. No señora, no tengo ningún lápiz, pero tengo papel, pluma y tinta. 5. ¿ Tiene Vd. un sello? 6. Tengo algunos, ¿ cuantos quiere Vd.? 7. Sólo unos pocos. 8. ¿Esta Vd. escribiendo a sus amigos en España? 9. Escribí ayer, ahora estoy escribiendo a mi socio en la Argentina. 10. ¿ Viene él este año? 11. No señor, yo me voy a Buenos Aires este mes. 12. ¿Lleva Vd. a su familia? 13. No ésta vez, pero la próxima vez que vaya. 14. ¿ Tiene Vd. muchos amigos en Buenos Aires? 15. Muchos, y también en Montevideo. 16. ¿ Va Vd. al concierto esta tarde? 17. Si es posible iré, dicen que será muy bueno. 18. ¿ A qué hora concluye? 19. No sé, pero supongo que concluye a la hora de costumbre. 20. No me gusta estar fuera muy tarde en este tiempo. 21. No hace tanto frio esta tarde. 22. No, creo que esta mucho mejor que esta mañana. 23. Esta mañana estaba helando. 24. Entonces a medio dia estaba nevando, pero ahora hace buen tiempo.

EJERCICIO X.

(Cardinal Numbers as Substantives and Adjectives : pp. 27-30.)

I. ¿ Qué hora es? 2. No sé. 3. ¿ Como es eso? 4. Mi reloj ha parado. 5. ¿ Lo dió Vd. cuerda anoche? 6. Si, lo dí un poco demasiada cuerda y rompi el muelle real. 7. Esta el suyo adelantado o atrasado? 8. El mio está diez minutos adelantado y ayer estaba quince minutos atrasado. 9. ¿ Oye Vd. el reloj de la iglesia? 10. Sí, acaban de dar las diez, pondré mi reloj a esa hora. II. ¿ Donde hay un buen relojero? 12. En esa calle. 13. ¿ A que hora va Vd. a salir? 14. Siempre salgo cerca de las ocho a dar un paseo temprano por la mañana. 15. ¿ A que hora puedo verle a Vd. mañana? 16. Entre las tres y las cuatro, pero las cuatro me convendria mejor. 17. Muy bien, estaré aquí a las cuatro en punto. 18. ¿ Cuantos libros compró Vd. ayer? 19. Compré la historia de España en dos tomos y algunas novelas. 20. ¿ Qué prefiere Vd. leer? 21. Me gusta leer historia, viajes y novelas. 22. ¿ Ha escrito Vd. a su socio? 23. No todavia, pero voy a escribirle hoy. 24. ¿ Viene a Inglaterra este año? 25. Tal vez vendrá el año que viene. pero dudo que podrá venir este año.

silas anixone al na EJERCICIO XI. is shared i .1

(The Ordinal Numbers: pp. 30-32.)

I. ¿ Tiene Vd. el primer tomo de esta obra? 2. No, sólo tengo el tercer tomo. 3. ¿ Ha leido Vd. el segundo tomo? 4. No aún, tengo la intención de leerlo en seguida que tengo tiempo. 6. ¿ Es interesante ese libro que Vd. tiene en la mano? 6. Es el libro más interesante que jamás he leido. 7. ¿ Vió Vd. al rey de España cuando Vd. visitó Sevilla? 8. No, pero le ví el año antes en Madrid. 9. ¿ Va Vd. a España este año o el año que viene? 10. No, este año tengo la intención de visitar la Argentina y el Uruguay. 11. Es un viaje algo largo. 12. No, ahora se puede hacer en veinte días. 13. ¿ Se marea Vd.? 14. Sólo los primeros días si hace mal tiempo. 15. ¿ Cree Vd. que tendrá mucha molestia en la aduana? 16. Ninguna, Vd. ve no llevo nada nuevo. 17. ¿ Cuanto tiempo piensa Vd. quedarse en el extranjero? 18. Creo que unos seis meses

o tal vez un año. 19. ¿ Ha regresado su hijo de Buenos Aires? 20. No, ha extendido su viaje, y ha decidido visitar Montevideo y varias otras ciudades. 21. ¿ Ha leido Vd. la historia de España? 22. Si, he leido tres historias de España. 23. Supongo que Vd. le gusta leer historia en preferencia a novelas. 24. Encuentro la historia un sujeto muy interesante. 25. La novela de hoy día no me interesa mucho, verdaderamente prefiero la astronomía.

EJERCICIO XII.

(Fractions, Dimensions and Collectives: pp. 32-35.)

I. ¿ Ha comprado Vd. un billete en la loteria española? 2. Si, he comprado varios, pero sólo he ganado muy pequeños premios. 3. ¿ Y finalmente ganó o perdió Vd.? 4. El resultado es que no he ganado ni perdido. 5. Pues, no era muy brillante, ¿ valia la pena? 6.; Oh! si, habia la excitación de pensar que iba a ganar una fortuna. 7. ¿ Compró Vd. un billete entero o solamente una parte? 8. Generalmente compré un decimo. 9. Sigue Vd. comprando ahora? 10. No, estoy cansado de esperar la fortuna, así es que ya no compro. 11. Hay loterias en otros paises además de España? 12. Si, en muchos, pero no en Inglaterra en recientes años, porque se supone que causa pobreza. 13. Ese es un error, porque lo que hubieran gastado en billetes de loteria lo gastan en bebidas, el juego y diversiones. 14. Eso no da mucha satisfacción, no dá ninguna esperanza, mientras que una loteria da esperanza. 15. ¿Cree Vd. que la loteria es desmoralizadora? 16. Cualquiera cosa llevada al exceso es mala, pero nunca he oido de alguien que haya comprado billetes de loteria en exceso. 17. ¿ Cuándo su billete ganó, que hizo Vd. con el dinero? 18. Compre otro decimo, y un par de guantes. 19. ¿Cuándo se verifica el sorteo? 20. En España cada quincena, y en algunos paises tienen un sorteo cada semana. 21. ¿ Cuándo es el próximo sorteo? 22. La semana que viene, creo que será el martes o el miércoles próximo. 23. ¿ Va Vd. a comprar un billete esta vez? 24. No, he acabado de jugar, y no tengo la intención de comprar más, ya no tiene ninguna facinación para mi.

EJERCICIO XIII.

(Personal and Reflective Pronouns: pp. 36-38.)

I. ¿ Tiene Vd. noticias de su hermano esta semana? 2. No señor, no he tenido noticias de él por dos semanas. 3. ¿ Cuándo espera Vd. que regrese de su viaje a España? 4. Hoy en una quincena, aunque un amigo le esperaba la semana pasada. 5. ¿Cómo es eso, es tan incierto? 6. Si, porque hace una semana escribió que iba a Portugal. 7. Hoy en ocho mi sobrina llegará de Cuba donde ha pasado el invierno. 8 ; Es un buen lugar en que pasar el invierno? 9. Es el mejor sitio que conozco, es verdaderamente ideal. 10. Pero, creo que en el verano hace mucho calor, ¿ no es asi? II. O si, en el verano es absolutamente tropical, los meses ideales son: Noviembre, Diciembre, Enero, Febrero, Marzo y Abril. 12. ¿ Cómo compara Cuba con las otras islas occidentales? 13. Siempre ha sido la mejor de todos modos, como colonia española o como República independiente. 14. Entiendo que es inmensamente rica en minerales, maderas, tabaco, azúcar, etc. 15. Si, facilmente podría mantener una población de 15,000,000 de habitantes. 16. Tengo varios amigos que han ido allí y se han hecho ciudadanos cubanos. 17. Es muy difícil estar satisfecho en cualquier otro país cuando se ha vivido en la Habana y se ha conocido la buena sociedad cubana. 18. ¿ Podia Vď. hablar español cuando Vd. visitó la Habana? 19. Podía hablarlo un poco pero, no tan bien como lo hablo ahora. 20. Hablaba su hermano español en aquel tiempo, o lo ha aprendido desde entonces? 21. A ese tiempo hablaba español muy bien, pero desde entonces ha tenido muy poca práctica. 22. ¿ Habla su hermana el ruso y el español ? 23. Habla español mucho mejor que el ruso, porque el español es muy fácil, pero el ruso es muy difícil. 24. ¿ Ha viajado ella en Rusia este año? 25. No, no este año, pero espera viajar en Rusia el año que viene.

EJERCICIO XIV.

(The Demonstrative and Possessive Pronouns: pp. 38-40.)

1. ¿ Tiene Vd. alguna dificultad en aprender la gramática? 2. No, señora, no tengo ninguna dificultad, y hallo la gramática española muy fácil comparada con las de otras lenguas. 3. En casi todas las gramáticas hay

demasiadas reglas y excepciones. 4. Muchos gramáticos parecen estar bajo la impresión que el estudiante desea ser un gramático. 5. Yo también he notado eso, y es lástima que entran tanto en detalles inútiles. 6. Es porque se olvidan que todo lo que el discípulo desea es hablar el lenguaje corriente de la gente y no quieren estar molestados con los tecnicismos. 7. Lo que se requiere es un conocimiento práctico de la lengua. 8. Estoy de acuerdo con Vd., y considero que lo que se requiere es menos reglas y más ejemplos. 9. ¿ Cómo aprende Vd. las reglas y ejemplos? 10. Leo las reglas y escribo los ejemplos dos o tres veces y de ese modo los aprendo. II. ¿ Halla Vd. los pronombres difíciles? Los escribe Vd. ? 12. Los hallo muy fáciles, pero escribo cada línea para acordarme, de este modo la memoria los retiene más tiempo. 13. ¿ Los escribe Vd. en este libro o en aquel? 14. No los escribo en este libro ni en ese, sino en aquel. 15. También tengo un librito para el vocabulario, este es Vd. ve que es alfabético; en la página A, escribo así, "Aunt," tia; "another," otro, otra, &c. 16. Esa es muy buena idea, yo haré lo mismo. Puede Vd. decirme cuantas palabras necesitaré? 17. Se considera que una persona educada requiere un vocabulario de mil palabras. 18. Supongo que eso es para la conversación ordinaria y no incluye los términos que se requieren en cualquier negocio especial. 19. Ciertamente, solamente la conversación ordinaria. 20. Ahora comprendo. 21. Cada profesión y cada negocio tiene sus terminos especiales que se tienen que aprender por los que lo estudian. 22. ¿ Pues en cuanto sepa mil palabras en español y como construir las frases, sabre español? 23. ¿ Cuántas puedo aprender en un día? Diremos unas cien? 24. Entonces sabría Vd. la lengua en diez dias; es imposible. Diremos que Vd. pueda aprender diez nuevas palabras cada día y continuar, eso le daría más tiempo para comprender la lengua. 25. Si aprendiese Vd. el Vocabulario en "Spanish Self-Taught" Vd. lo hallará suficiente.

EJERCICIO XV.

(Relative and Indefinite Pronouns: pp. 41, 42.)

1. ¿ Cuántas cartas ha escrito Vd. esta semana? 2. He escrito ciento cincuenta cartas y veinte postales. 3. ¿ Es

ésta pluma tintero (estilográfica) de Vd. o de su hermano? 4. Esta es mia, esa es de mi hermano y aquella es de Vd. 5. ¿ Qué es el número de su casa de Vd.? 6. Es el número 34, la de mi hermano es 35, y la de mi tio es 55, todas en la misma calle. 7. ¿ Cuántos caballos ha comprado Vd. de ese hombre? 8. Compré un par ayer, y compraré uno más mañana. 9. ¿ Ha echado Vd. en el correo todas mis cartas? 10. Sólo he echado en el buzón cinco esta mañana y seis esta noche. II. ¿ Desea Vd. hablar a mi socio o a mi? 12. No deseo hablar a su socio, sino a Vd. 13. ¿ Habló Vd. al médico ayer? 14. No hablé al médico, sino al abogado y al juez. 15. ¿ De quien es ese retrato que Vd. recibio ayer? 16. Ese es un retrato de un amigo mio quien reside en Sevilla. 17. ¿ Qué es; una acquarela, al oleo, o al pastel? 18. Es un pastel, parece más vivo en pastel, aunque yo prefiero al oleo. 19. Yo también creo que no hay nada como un cuadro al oleo, y además es el que dura más. 20. Me gusta mucho la pintura, estudie tres años en Madrid. 21. Ha visto Vd. la galeria de pintura en Madrid cuando estuvo Vd. en España. 22. Si se considera una de las más hermosas galerias en el mundo; está llena de valiosos cuadros. 23. He pasado días mirando los cu dros, y espero pasar muchos más días allí. 24. Me gustar'a ir con Vd. la próxima vez que Vd. visite España. 25. Esa es muy buena idea, tal vez podremos arreglar el viaje para el invierno que viene; podemos seguir a Sevilla y así escapar el invierno de Londres. 26. ¿ Es esta la casa que él vendio recientemente? 27. El abogado a quien ví ayer me dijo que era esa. 28. Alguien llamó. Entre. 29. No es nadie, era el gato o el perro.

EJERCICIO XVI.

(The Interrogative Pronouns: pp. 43, 44.)

1. Yo tengo mi libro, pero ¿ de quien es este libro? ¿ Es de Vd.? 2. Si, señorita Alvarez, es mio; quiere Vd. ha er ne el favor de pasarmelo. 3. Con gusto, aquí esta. Me parece un libro muy interesante. 4. ¡ Oh, si ! lo leí el año pasado; es la historia de Cristobal Colón. 5. Le gusta a Vd. leer libros de viajes y descubrimiento? 6. Son muy interesantes e instructivos. 7. ¡ Y qué hermoso libro es ! ¿ Cuánto costo? 8. No recuerdo, lo compré hace muchos años en España. 9. ¿ Cuántas canciones recibió

Vd. de su amigo en Lima? 10. El me mandó dos canciones peruanas, y mi primo en Madrid me mando seis canciones populares. 11. Me gustaría cantar, pero no tengo voz. 12. Una vez oí a un cantor decir que nadie debía decir eso, porque con práctica se puede mejorar la voz. 13. Puedo tocar el piano y la guitara, y ahora estoy aprendiendo a tocar el violín. 14. Un amigo mio está aprendiendo a tocar el arpa, y dice que es muy difícil. 15. ¿ Fué su amigo quien llego ayer con ese hermoso arpa? 16. Si, llegó por el último tren a las dos de la mañana. 17. ¿ Toca en público o es un aficionado? 18. Es un aficionado, y sólo toca en público en los conciertos de caridad. 19. ¿ Le tomó mucho tiempo aprender? 20. Cerca de seis años, pero trabajó mucho para hacerse proficiente. 21. No pensé que tomaría tanto tiempo aprender a tocar bien. 22. Eso depende sobre el grado de proficiencia deseada y el talento del discipulo. 23. Aunque me gusta el arpa prefiero el piano, que es realmente el rey de los instrumentos. 24. ¿ Le gusta a Vd. los pianos mecánicos? 25. De ningún modo, les faltan esa personalidad que hace toda la diferencia.

EJERCICIO XVII.

(The Verbs. Haber; pp. 45-47.)

I. ¿ Qué son las noticias hoy? (¿ Qué hay de nuevo?) ¿ Ha visto Vd. el periodico? 2. No hay nada nuevo. He leido tres periódicos. 3. ¿ Lee Vd. muchos periódicos? 4. Generalmente leo dos o tres periódicos para tener una idea de lo que pasa. 5. ¿ Había llegado su amigo cuando Vd. salío? 6. No, no le he visto por algunos meses, pero espero verle mañana. 7. He recibido su carta esta mañana, pero no la de su tio. 8. Si le hubiera visto le habría dicho de ese negocio. 9. ¿ Cuándo verá Vd. a su socio sobre esa casa? 10. Le veré mañana, quiero saber si le gusta la casa. II. ¿ Es una casa grande o pequeña? 12. Es dos veces el tamaño de esta casa, y tiene un jardín grande. 13. ¿ Cultiva Vd. su jardín? 14. Me gustan las flores, pero es muy costoso tener un jardin grande. 15. Si ya sé, pero se puede tener un jardin pequeño, sin mucho gasto. 16. Si, creo que es mucho mejor tener un jardín pequeño. 17. ¿ Donde compra Vd. las semillas? 18. Mi hermano, que vive en el campo me manda semillas cada año. 19. ¿ Reside muy lejos de la ciudad? 20. Reside serca

de veinte millas de aquí, y tiene unos diez acres. 21. ¿ Le gusta vivir en el campo más que en la ciudad? 22. Vive en el campo porque goza de mejor salud allí que en la ciudad. 23. Creo que es mejor para todos vivir en el campo, pero no es conveniente para los negocios. 24. Tiene Vd. razón, y no me gusta pasar dos o tres horas cada día en un tren.

EJERCICIO XVIII.

(Tener; pp. 48-50.)

I. ¿ Tiene Vd. un billete para el próximo tren expreso? 2. No, no he comprado mi billete todavia, pero voy a comprarlo enseguida. 3. ¿ Puede Vd. decirme donde está la taquilla? 4. Suba Vd. ésta escalera y hallará la taquilla a la derecha o a la izquierda. 5. Quiero un billete de ida y vuelta para Cadiz. ¿ qué es el precio, para regresar hoy? 6. ¿Cuánto tiempo tardará para llegar allí por el tren expreso? 7. Por el tren ordinario tomará dos horas, por expreso una hora y media. 8. ¿ Tiene Vd. un horario? Este es muy viejo. 9. Aquí tiene Vd. uno por este mes. 10. ¿Cuánto tiempo quedará Vd. en el campo esta vez? II. Esta vez no quedaré más que dos o tres semanas. 12. ¿ Qué hará Vd. en el campo, pescar, cazar, jugar golf, o nadar? 13. Pescar es demasiado despacio, la caza no me interesa, pero me gusta nadar. 14. Yo prefiero el golf a todos los otros deportes, es el mejor ejercicio. 15. Parece que el golf es el deporte más popular en este pais. 16. ¿ Ha leido Vd. el libro de su amigo sobre el deporte? 17. Ši, es muy interesante y bien escrito, y se vende bien. 18. ¿ Es su primera obra? Creo que he visto otras obras por él. 19. Es su quinta obra, en efecto es un escritor muy popular. 20. ¿Ha hecho una fortuna con sus obras sobre el deporte? 21. No una fortuna, pero sus obras le traen una buena renta. 22. Ha leido Vd. todas las obras que él ha escrito? 23. No, sólo he leido dos de ellas, la una sobre el golf, y la otra sobre la caza. 24. ¿ Su amigo va a jugar el golf el sábado que viene? 25. El juega golf cada sábado, si hace buen tiempo.

EJERCICIO XIX.

(Ser; pp. 51-53.)

¿ Qué será su hijo, abogado, doctor o ingeniero?
 Creo que será ingeniero, porque es lo más lucrativo.

3. Por supuesto si uno se hace famoso, pero de otro modo no lo considero muy lucrativo. 4. Pues eso se puede decir de casi cualquiera profesión, es sólo el hombre que sobresale quien gana mucho. 5. Además de la ganacia, o debiera decir aparte del provecho prefiere la ingeniería a cualquiera otra profesión. 6. ¿ Su primo se ha hecho un gran pianista? 7. Es un gran pianista en su pais, pero su fama no se ha extendido a otros paises. 8. ¿Le ha tomado mucho tiempo hacerse famoso? q. Casí veinte años, pero tocaba maravillosamente hace diez años. Io. ¿ Practica aún mucho cada dia? II. Creo que practíca a lo menos cinco horas cada dia. 12. ¿ Toca Vd. el piano? 13. No, yo no toco el piano, pero toco la guitara y el violín. 14. ¿ Ha oido Vd. al famoso pianista español? 15. Si, le he oido aquí y en Paris el año pasado. 16. ¿ Fué Vd. abogado hace diez años? 17. No señorita, fui médico, pero no gustandome el trabajo, me hice abogado. 18. Ha visto Vd. a su primo que volvio de Montevideo la semana pasada. 19. No le he visto aún, pero espero verle esta noche. 20. Me parece que cuando él estaba en el Uruguay, Vd. estaba en la Habana, ¿no es verdad? 21. Si, señora, y visité varias otras ciudades de la República Cubana. 22. ¿ Tiene Vd. intención de volver este año o el año que viene? 23. El año que viene, porque creo que los regocios estarán mejores, por eso tendré más dinero. 24. ¿ Ha estado su amigo en el I cuador este año? 25. Si, le gusta el clima, y puede ganar mucho dinero allí.

EJERCICIO XX. (Estar; pp. 53-55.)

1. ¿ Ha visto Vd. la casa de su amigo? No todavia.

2. Su casa esta bien situada, y muy grande.

3. ¿ Está en una calle ancha o angosta?

4. Está en una calle muy ancha, y tiene un hermoso jardín.

5. ¿ Le gusta a Vd. tener una casa o un piso?

6. Me gusta tener una casa pero un piso es más conveniente para una familia pequeña.

7. ¿ De quien es est casa tan alta? ¿ Es del hermano de Vd.?

8. No, pertenece a un amigo mio y él desea venderla.

9. ¿ Qué es el valor de la casa? (¿ Cuánto vale la casa?).

10. No se el valor, pero mi amigo está pidiendo doble lo que él pago.

11. ¿ Cómo es que hay tantas casas en esta calle para vender?

12. Porque mucha gente

prefiere vivir afuera de la ciudad. 13. Comprendo eso porque es tan fácil salir al campo por automóvil o tren expreso. 14. ¿ Qué hace el hermano de su amigo en Paris? 15. Creo que esta estudiando para abogado, pero no estoy seguro. 16. ¿ Va Vd. a jugar el golf mañana con sus amigos de la Habana? 17. No, vamos a St. Albans, a ver la antigua Catedral. 18. ¿Va Vd. por el ómnibus o por automóvil? 19. Vamos por un ómnibus motor porque así veremos más del campo. 20. Sin duda se puede ver más lejos encima de un ómnibus que en un automóvil. 21. ¿ Ha estado Vd. todavia en Richmond y en los Jardines de Kew? 22. Los he visto, y ahora quiero ver Hampton Court, he oido decir que hay hermosos cuadros allí. 23. Eso es verdad, pero si Vd. quiere ver muy hermosos cuadros vaya Vd. a Windsor Castle. 24. ¿Subió Vd. la Giralda cuando estuvo Vd. en Sevilla el año pasado? 25. Si, señorita, y la vista es muy hermosa en un día de sol. 26. Lo que me gustó más fué la antigua Catedral.

EJERCICIO XXI.

(The Regular Verbs; First Conjugation: pp. 56-58.)

I. ; Habló Vd. a su padre de su viaje a la Argentina? 2. No todavia, pero espero verle esta noche y le hablaré del porvenir de ese pais? 3. ¿ Cuándo hablo Vd. a su socio de ese asunto? 4. Le hablé ayer y hemos arreglado el negocio. 5.; Cómo hablo su abogado en el tribunal? 6. Habló clara y elocuentemente y gano el pleito. 7. ¿ Cuántas lenguas habla Vd.? 8. Hablo cinco lenguas y ahora estoy aprendiendo otra. 9. ¿ De que hablaron Vds. anoche después de comer? 10. Hablamos de música y arte, y el nuevo cuadro por un artista español. II. ¿ Quién estaba hablando en el comedor esta tarde? 12. Era una peruana que está visitando este país. 13. ¿ Quedará aquí mucho tiempo, o se irá a Paris? 14. Creo que se quedará aquí durante el verano, y que se irá a Sevilla para el invierno. 15. Habló Vd. del concierto a su señora e hija? 16. No señorita, hablamos de las nuevas pinturas en la Galeria. 17. ¿Cúal halla Vd. más fácil, hablar o escribir español? 18. Lo hallo mucho más fácil escribir que hablar porque tengo muy poca práctica en hablar. 19. Eso es lo mismo con todas las lenguas, conversar siempre es lo más difícil. 20. Es muy

buena práctica leer buenas novelas y periódicos. 21. Si, lo hallo así, y he leido muchas muy buenas novelas. 22. ¿ Ha visto Vd. jamás un cuarto tan confortable como este ? 23. Además de ser confortable está bien amueblado y hermoso. 24. ¿ Cómo esta su hijo ? ¿ Le ha visto Vd. hoy ? 25. Está mucho mejor, gracias, pero no sale todavía porque hace tan mal tiempo. 26. ¿ Quíen edificó la casa en que vive su amigo ? Un arquitecto muy bien conocido.

EJERCICIO XXII.

(The Regular Verbs: Second Conjugation: pp. 59-62.)

I. ¿ Halla Vd. alguna dificultad en aprender los verbos? 2. No, creo que son muy fáciles ; todo lo que se requiere es un poco atención. 3. Es verdad, y algunos sólo aprenden la primera y la tercera persona del singular y plural. 4. De la primera conjugación esto sería: hablo, habla, hablamos, hablan. 5. Si, ese es el modo que yo aprendo cada tiempo, porque no es necesario aprender tu aprendes, o vosotros aprendéis. 6. Cuando vo aprendo un verbo noto particularmente la primera persona pues esa forma la clave a las demás. 7. Por supuesto, ese es el único modo de arrender rapidamente. 8. ¿Qué es la diferencia en el significado de los verbos saber y conocer? 9. ¿ Quiere Vd. darme algunos ejemplos del uso de estos dos verbos? 10. Un buen ejemplo del uso de estos dos verbos es el siguiente. II. ¿Sabe Vd. quien conoce a ese hombre? Sé que su hijo de Vd. le conoce. 12. Sé ahora como emplear estos dos verbos y no tendré más dificultad. 13. No puedo comprender la diferencia entre el imperfecto y el pasado definido. 14. Eso se puede explicar facilmente. El impe fecto, por ejemplo: Leia cuando Vd. entraba. 15. El pusado definido: Le ví el año pasado. Vd. conprende, no puedo verle otra vez el año pasado. 16. Otros ejemplos del imperfecto: Entonces viviamos en los Estados Unidos. El estudiaba sus lecciones cada dia. reo que I futuro es el más fácil. Siempre puedo recordarlo asocian lo con la palabra inglesa "Future." 18. Si, ese cs muy lu n modo, porque la p imera persona del tiempo futuro casa siempre termina en re asi: hablaré, aprederé, &c. 19. El condicional también es fácil pués termina en ria, asi: hablaría, aprendería. 20. Pero la dificultad es recordar el subjuntivo. 21. Le enseñare como hacerlo muy fácil.

Tome el Pasado Definido de hablar, es decir, hablaron, quite la terminación ron y añádese se, re y ra. 22. Ah! Ahora comprendo, hablase, hablare, hablara; pero como recuerda Vd. el Presente de Subjuntivo? 23. Es practicamente lo mismo que la tercera persona del imperativo. 24. Todas mis dificultades han desaparecido, muchas gracias.

EJERCICIO XXIII.

(The Regular Verbs: Third Conjugation: The use of the Subjunctive: the Sequence of Tenses: pp. 63-66.)

I. Dudo que venga hoy, porque vino ayer. 2. Bueno sería (or fuera) no llegar tarde, pues el tren sale a las ocho en punto. 3. No lo haga esta semana, dejelo para la semana próxima (or, para la semana que viene). 4. No se vaya al Peru este año, porque mi socio viene y desea verle a Vd. 5. ¡ Que entre! pues tengo que verle hov. 6. Cuanto siento que Vd. se moleste. 7. No crei que estudiase Vd. la astronomía. 8. Si tuviese interesantes libros sobre astronomía los leería. 9. Pensé que Vd. no hallase ninguno, pero hay algunos. 10. ¿ Le gusta a Vd. la astronomía? Si, me gusta mucho (muchisimo). II. Si me gustase (gustara) la astronomía, procuraría los libros necesarios. 12. ¿ Iría Vd. a Buenos Aires si tuviese (tuviera) dinero? 13. No, pero quiero ir alla para ganar una fortuna. 14. Hay muchos que quisieran tener más dinero, pero no tienen el valor para ir a otro país. 15. Me suplicó que le viera (viese) a Vd. y le dijese (dijera) las ventajas del Peru. 16. Acabo de recibir una carta de mi primo en Montevideo. 17. El dice: "Desearía que viniese (o vinera) Vd. para que pasemos unos meses juntos en mi estancia cerca de esta ciudad." 18. Saldré para Uruguay la semana que viene y le escribiré a Vd. lo que me dijere sobre el asunto. 19. ¿Comprende Vd. el uso del subjuntivo en español ? 20. Si, señor, no veo ninguna dificultad en emplearlo correctamente, pero lo que quisiera saber es, ¿ si hay muchos verbos irregulares y si son difíciles? 21. Hay unos quinientos, pero no son difíciles si se aprendiesen sistemáticamente. 22. ¿ Es necesario que apredíese la conjugación de cada uno de ellos? 23. No es necesario que aprenda más que treinta, y esos se pueden dividir en clases que lo hace mucho más simple. 24. Es irregular el verbo escribir? Noto que Vd. dice escrito por

el participio pasado de written. 25. Esa es la única irregularidad en el verbo escribir, lo demás se conjuga como el verbo vivir.

EJERCICIO XXIV.

(Irregular Verbs; First, Second, and Third Classes of slightly irregular Verbs: pp. 69-71.)

I. ¿ Pues bien, tiene Vd. alguna dificultad con estas tres clases de verbos? 2. No tengo ninguna dificultad en aprenderlos, pero no comprendo por qué el verbo soler es defectivo. 3. Es defectivo porque sólo se emplea en el presente y el imperfecto del Indicativo; los siguientes son unos ejemplos. 4. Suelo salir a las nueve cuando hace buen tiempo. 5. Solía visitar a España y la Argentina cada año, pero ultimamente he ido a Cuba. 6. Aquí en Londres suele llover en Junio. 7. ¿ Suele Vd. levantarse temprano? Si, suelo levantarme muy temprano. 8. ¿ A qué hora suele llegar el correo en el campo? 9. A las ocho, y como suelo salir temprano por un paseo, encuentro al cartero. 10. Ahora comprendo, pero los verbos, helar, nevar, tronar y llover son difíciles. II. Veremos. Son verbos inpersonales, es decir, sólo se usan en la tercera persona del singular; hay otros, tales como relampaguear, lloviznar y granizar. 12. Veo, que esos verbos son verdaderamente irregulares y defectivos. Eso es. 13. Amanecer y anochecer se emplean en las tres personas, en el singular y plural. Amanecí en Londres. 14. El sabado pasado anochecí en Brighton. 15. Es preciso cerrar la ventana porque hace frio. 16. Es verdad, pero en el comedor hace calor, sería mejor ir allí. 17. Hace una semana desde que he visto a su amigo y su familia. 18. Vd. ha llegado muy tarde, pero dicen que es mejor tarde que nunca. 19. Hay mucha fruta en el mercado. Parece que la cosecha fué muy buena. 20. Comeremos peras si las hay. ¿ Qué fruta ha visto Vd. en el mercado hace una semana? 21. Pues bien, ; no hay nada más que Vd. desea preguntar sobre estos verbos? Mil gracias, esta todo muy claramente explicado. 22 ¿ Llueve? No, pero llovía esta mañana y llovió anoche, pero espero que no lloverá mañana. 23. ¿ A donde va Vd. mañana? Al campo, y si lloviese sería muy desagradable. 24. ¿ Tiene Vd. dolor de muelas? No, nunca he tenido dolor de

muelas ni dolor de cabeza, pero tengo un resfriado. 25. Lo siento mucho, ¿ lo ha tenido Vd. mucho tiempo? Lo he tenido unos dias, pero está mucho mejor ahora, gracias.

EJERCICIO XXV.

(Slightly Irregular Verbs: 4th to 7th Classes: pp. 72-76.)

I. Veo que en estas listas no se menciona el verbo conocer. ¿Se conjuga come el verbo traducir? 2. Se conjuga como traducir, salvo en el pasado definido en cuyo tiempo es regular. 3. Supongo que se conjuga así: conoci, conociste, conoció, conocimos, conocisteis, conocieron. 4. Ese es el modo, pues es regular en ese tiempo. 5. ¿ Puede Vd. dec'rme como se usa el verbo doler? 6. Se usa del mism) modo que gustar, por ejemplo: ¿Tiene Vd. dolor de cabeza? ¿Le duele a Vd. la cabeza? 7. El verbo doler se conjuga como los de la tercera clase, vease volver. 8. El verbo sentir tiene muchos significados, por ejemplo: Siento que estoy tarde. Siento que no puedo ir. Siento bien. 9. Tocante a ese negocio del cual hablamos el otro dia, ¿ cree Vd. que es un bueno negocio? 10. No sé, no he visto el balance ni los libros. II. Es verdad que Vd. piensa abrir una sucursal en cada capital de las naciones en que se habla español? 12. Si, pero costaría tanto que creo que sería mejor formar una compañia anónima. 13. ¿Cuántos paises hay donde se habla español? Dieciocho y si se incluye la República de Panama hay diecinueve. 14 ¿ Son paises grandes? Algunos son enormes y otros son pequeños. 15. En los paises en que se habla español incluye Vd. el Portugal y el Brasil? 16. No porque en esos dos paises se habla portugues. 17. ¿ Hay mucha diferencia entre español y portugues? 18. No mucha, el hecho es que hay más de mil palabras españolas en portugues. 19. ¿ Hay mucho negocio entre Inglaterra y los paises en que se habla español? 20. Compran en Inglaterra más de $f_{50,000,000,000,000}$ de mercaderias cada año. 21. ¿ Hay oportunidades de ganar dinero en esos paises? 22. Estudie el mapa y Vd. verá que no hay limite a las oportunidades. 23. ¿ Hay casas inglesas en esos paises? Muchas, y cada año más y más. 24. ¿ Podría yo ganar fortuna en esos paises sin hablar español ? 25. La misma clase de fortuna como la que pudiera ganar en Inglaterra sin hablar inglés,

EJERCICIO XXVI.

(Irregular Verbs: Andar, dar, ir, saber, hacer; pp. 77-82.)

I. ¿ Cómo progresa Vd. con los verbos irregulares? 2. No los hallo difíciles, y me gusta ver las irregularidades tan claramente indicadas. 3. ¿ Quién le ha enviado este ramillete que acaba de llegar ? 4. Un amigo que ha tomado una casa en el campo. 5. ¿ Le va Vd. a ver? Si, me ha convidado a pasar dos semanas en su casa de campo. 6. ¿ Esta lejos? Sólo veinticinco millas de la ciudad. Iré en un autómovil porque me gusta tanto más que el tren. 7. Acabo de encontrar a su amigo de la Habana, me dijo que sale para Roma la semana que viene. 8. ¿ Supongo que los dias son cortos en el invierno y largos en el verano en la Habana como en Londres? 9. En la Habana amanece y anochece siempre a las mismas horas, en todos los dias del año. 10. Me gustaría vivir allí, porque parece un lugar ideal. II. Oh, si, en los meses de invierno v primavera, pero en el verano, en Junio, Julio, Agosto y Septiembre el calor es terrible. 12. Solía salir de la Habana a fines de Mayo e hice la travesia a Tampa, Florida, y entonces fui por tren a Nueva York. 13. Pero hace mucho calor en Nueva York en el verano. Si, así lo hallé y en Julio fuí a Saratoga y entonces al Canada y así escapé el calor. 14. ¿ Parece que no le gusta el calor? Me gusta un tiempo templado pero no tropical. 15. ¿ Qué llama Vd. tropical? Cuando el termómetro pasa los 85 grados Fah. 16. Vd. dice Fahrenheit, ¿ qué es la diferencia entre Fahrenheit y Centígrado? 17. Bien, en el termómetro Fahrenheit el agua se hiela a 32 grados en el termómetro Centigrado a o°. 18. ¿ Ha regresado su cuñado de Mejico? No, no piensa volver este año. 19. Hace un viaje por la costa de Sud América, y ha visitado el Ecuador y el Peru y ahora está en Valparaiso. 20. ¿ Le gusta á Vd. viajar en ese continente? Muchisimo, es la parte más interesante del mundo. 21. Su presente civilización v su historia son de muchisimo interes. 22. ; Ha viajado Nd. mucho en esa parte del mundo? Si, pasé cinco años allí, v estov escribiendo un libro sobre mis experiencias; y será ilustrado por las muchas fotografias que he podido tomar.

EJERCICIO XXVII.

(Irregular Verbs: Poder, decir, caber, querer, jugar, dormir, pp. 83-87.)

I. Ha regresado la Señorita X. de Monte Carlo? Llegó aquí esta mañana, y la estoy esperando ahora. 2. Ganó mucho en Monte Carlo? No, creo que perdio unas froo, v entonces tuvo el juicio de dejarlo. 3. Creo que algunas personas tienen un sistema por el cual creen que pueden ganar. Oh, si, muchas, y esas personas son los mejores clientes porque siguen jugando hasta que no tienen nada. 4. ¿Ha viajado Vd. mucho? Si, señorita, he estado en las principales ciudades de España, Francia, Italia, los Estados Unidos de Norte América, Mejico (o Mexico), Argentina, Chile, Cuba e Inglaterra. He vivido en Londres y Liverpool. 5. Debe haber costado mucho viajar tanto. Depende de como uno viaja y de como se vive. Si se vive extravagantemente en casa o viaja por primera clase no creo que hace mucha diferencia. 6. ¿Se equivoca Vd. en el empleo de los verbos? No muy amenudo, salvo en el caso del verbo jugar; nunca se cuando emplear ese verbo o el verbo tocar. 7. Es muy fácil, usamos el verbo jugar cuando referimos a juegos, v tocar cuando hablamos de los instrumentos de música. 8. ¿Toca Vd. el piano? No, vo toco la guitara, pero mi hermana toca el piano, y mi prima toca el organo. 9. ¿ Juega Vd. a los naipes? No, señora, juego el tenis y el criket. 10. Duerme Vd. bien en la ciudad? No tan bien como en el campo, esa es una razón por qué prefiero vivir en el campo. 11. ¿Duerme Vd. con la ventana abierta o cerrada? En el invierno casí todos duermen con las ventanas cerradas y en el verano abiertas. 12. ¿ Cabe más en su baul de Vd.? Si, cabe algo pequeño, pero no quiero llenarlo demasiado. Sé que cabe mucho en ese baul. 13. ¿Cuántas personas caben en este salón? A lo menos 500 personas, pero en el salón al otro lado de la calle caben 1,000 personas. 14. No cabriamos todos en este cuarto (esta habitacion o pieza). No, pero mi amigo halló uno esta mañana, me dijo que era un salón de lectura donde cabremos todos. 15. Veo que Vd. comprende el verbo caber. Lo hallé algo dificil al principio, pero ahora es fácil. 16. El verbo querer significa tantas cosas, desear, apetecer, amar; debe ser un verbo muy útil. Lo es. 17. Alguien me dijo que los verbos españoles

son difíciles, pero yo los he hallado muy fáciles. Sí, en esta gramática estan presentados del modo más fácil, posible. 18. Si, casi todas las gramáticas omiten las partes regulares, con el resultado que a veces es muy molesto para el discipulo saber como formar los otros tiempos; no basta decir que son regulares. 19. La gran cosa en enseñar es simplificar. Vd. tiene razón, hace todo más fácil aprender, y mucho más interesante. 20. Tenga Vd. la bondad de aceptar mis excusas por no haber venido la semaña pasada como prometi, estuve muy ocupado. 21. Ciertamente, yo sé muy bien que Vd. tiene un importante negocio que arreglar. 22. En la carta que mande a mi amigo en la Habana he incluido una primera de cambio de f.100, y aun no he tenido contestación. 23. Acabo de leer en el diario de esta mañana que el vapor fué detenido por el mal tiempo y sólo llegó a la Habana ayer, asi es que no es extraño que Vd. no ha recibido noticias. 24. Ahora comprendo como es que no he recibido noticias de él. ¿ En que diario ha visto Vd. esa noticia? En este; aqui esta, ¿ ve Vd. este párrafo? Oh, si, gracias.

EJERCICIO XXVIII.

(Irregular Verbs: Poner, oir, traer, salir; pp. 89-92.)

I. ¿ Sabe Vd. los verbos poner, oir, traer y salir? 2. Si, señor, creo que los sé, pero ¿ cómo debo conjugar, suponer, oponer, componer y otros verbos tales como anteponer? 3. Justamente como el verbo poner. ¡Ah! ahora comprendo, pues eso los hace todos muy fáciles. 4. ¿ Hay otros verbos conjugados cómo el verbo oir? Sí. desoir. reoir y verbos semejantes. 5. Hay algunos verbos conjugados como traer, tales como atraer, contraer, destraer y algunos otros no muy usados. 6. Hay un verbo importante conjugado como salir, ¿ qué es? No sé. 7. Es el verbo sobresalir. ; Sobresale Vd. en aprender lenguas? 8. No sobresalgo tanto como mi hermano, él ha aprendido siete, y ahora aprende la octava, tiene una memoria maravillosa. 9. ¿ Ha traido Vd. éste libro hoy? No lo traje la semana pasada, pero mi hermana trajo una nueva novela esta mañana; la compró ayer. 10. ¿ Va Vd. a salir hoy? (¿ Sale Vd. hoy?) Si, en cerca de media hora, y volveré a eso de las diez esta noche. II. ¿ Va Vd. al teatro? No, señora, voy a un concierto para oir a un famoso pianista.

12. ¿ Ha estado Vd. jamás en la opera? No aún, pero espero ir la temporada que viene, si estoy en la ciudad. 13. ¿ Va Vd. al campo este verano? Espero poder ir por unas tres o cuatro semanas si no estuviese demasiado ocupado. 14. ¿Le gusta a Vd. viajar por tierra o por mar? Por mar si hace buen tiempo, pero como es tan incierto lo considero más seguro viajar por tierra. 15. ¿ Ha visto Vd. jamás a un hombre más activo que ese amigo de Vd. que acaba de salir? Jamás, tiene un cerebro maravillosamente activo. 16. Me parece a mi que cuánto más se hace más se puede hacer, y cuánto menos se hace tanto menos se siente inclinado a hacer. 17. Vd. tiene razón; además para gozar de buena salúd tenemos que ser activos. Pues bien, yo diría que eso depende sobre la persona, porque yo conozco a algunas personas que son muy perezosas y gozan de buena salud. 18. Naturalmente hay excepciones a casi todas las reglas. Yo sólo hablaba de mis observaciones personales. 19. ¿ Qué estudio le gusta a Vd. más? La música y la pintura. Creo que estos dos son los más atractivos de todos los estudios; por supuesto que para hacerse proficiente se requiere tiempo, dinero y paciencia. 20. Yo creo que cuando una vez se ha obtenido cierta proficiencia en estos estudios, dan mes placer que ningún otro. 21. Creo que Vd. tiene razen, pero de los millones que estudian estos sujetos ¿cuantos alcanzan proficiencia? Pues tengo que admitir que no muchos, ni aún siquiera un diez por ciento. 22. De estos dos sujetos, diría que la música es el más difícil, pero aún asi la mayoria de la gente lo estudian. 23. La dificultad es que a casí todos los estudiantes les parece un sujeto muy complicado y muchos lo hallan demasiado difícil para continuar. Eso es porque el estudio nunca ha sido propiamente simplificado. 24. Y esto aplica a casí todos los ramos de estudio, todos podian ser muy simplificados v hacerse atractivos.

EJERCICIO XXIX.

(Irregular Verbs: Valer, venir, ver, reir; pp. 93-97.)

I. ¿ Puede Vd. decirme qué verbos se conjugan como valer? Creo que si, equivaler y prevaler. 2. Hay algunos conjugados como venir, tales como; contravenir, convenir

intervenir, prevenir, sobrevenir. 3. Antever, se conjuga como ver. Fíjese en las irregularidades de estos verbos v entonces no tendrá ninguna dificultad. 4. ¿ Puede Vd. conjugar un verbo reflexivo? Trataré; alegrarse, me alegro, le alegras, se alegra, nos alegramos, vos alegrais, se alegran. 5. ¿ Qué sería el impersecto de lavarse? Me lavaba, etc., y el pasado definido es, me lavé. 6. ¿ Qué es el futuro? Me lavaré, te lavarás, se lavará, nos lavaremos, etc. 7. ¿ Qué es el imperativo de ambos verbos? Lavate. lavese, lavemonos, lavaos, lavense. 8. Alegrate, alegrese, alegrémonos, alegraos, alegrense. 9. ¿ Qué son el presente e imperfecto subjuntivo de lavarse? (Que yo) me lave. (Que yo) me lavase. 10. ¿ Qué es el futuro y condicional del subjuntivo? El futuro es: (Que o si) me levare, y el condicional es: (Que o si) me lavara. II. Sirvase traducir esto: lavese; no se lave; lavémonos; no nos lavemos. 12. No nos equivoquémos. Fijese en estos verbos y pronto los aprenderá. 13. ¿ Sabe Vd. los tiempos compuestos? Perfectamente: Me he alegrado: me habia alegrado: me hube alegrado: me habré alegrado: me habria alegrado. 14. ¿Y el subjuntivo? (Que) me haya alegrado, (que) me hubiese alegrado, (que) me hubiere alegrado, (que) me hubiera alegrado. 15. Mencione algunos de los verbos reflexivos. Atreverse, acostarse, burlarse, enfadarse, levantarse, quejarse, senlarse, casarse, maravillarse, quemarse, callarse, secarse. 16. Me parece que ahora podemos pasar a otros sujetos. Comprendo los verbos perfectamente. 17. ¿ Qué otros sujetos hay? No muchos, pero los dejaremos para nuestra próxima lección. 18. ¿ Va Vd. a salir esta tarde? Si, voy a dar un paseo, entonces voy al club para comer y después al teatro. 19. Creo que le ví a Vd. anteanoche en la opera. Es muy probable, un amigo mio había tomado un palco y convidado unos amigos. 20. ¿Le gustó a Vd. la función? Muchisimo, era la mejor que jamás he visto, y he asistido a muchas. 21. ¿ Se levanta Vd. temprano? Entre las seis y las siete, y como me acuesto tarde apenas tengo bastante descanso. 22. Cada persona requiere cierto número de horas de descanso, que es generalmente ocho horas, y si no se da Vd. ese descanso su salud tiene que sufrir. Ya lo sé, y ya empiezo a encontrarme algo viejo (me siento algo viejo).

EJERCICIO XXX.

(The Participle: pp. 98, 99.)

I. ; Ha leido Vd. el Don Quijote y las otras obras de Cervantes? 2. He leido el Don Quijote y me parece muy interesante, pero no he leido ningúna de sus otras obras. 3. ¿ Sabe Vd. qué 1916 era el tercenario de Cervantes y también el de Shakespeare? Si, es muy extraño que el más grande genio literario de cada uno de los dos paises vivió a la mism lépoca. 4. ? Ha leido Vd. el Don Quijote en es pañol? No, lo he leido en inglés, pero tengo la intención de leerlo en español el mes próximo. 5. Siempre me gusta leer una obra en la lengua en que se ha escrito, y no una traducción. 6. Si, he notado que todas las obras famosas pierden algo en la traducción, y no creo que sea culpa del traductor. 7. ¿ Quiere Vd. tener la bondad de abrir la ventana? Esta está abierta, pero abriré la puerta, entonces tendremos una corriente de aire. 8. ¡ Ha escrito Vd. a esa casa todavia? He escrito y echado la carta en el buzón pues el asunto es urgente. o. Desearía saber si su amigo suele venir puntualmente. 10. Suele venir muy puntualmente, pero hoy los caminos están malos debido a la nieve y esto podrá detenerle. II. ¿Cómo viene? Por automóvil, pero aún los mejores automóviles están a veces detenidos. 12. ¿ Qué va Vd. a hacer el invierno próximo? No tengo ningún programa, ni plan, ni idea. De una cosa estoy cierto, que no tengo la intención de quedarme en Londres otro invierno si lo puedo evitar. 13. Pues, tengo que admitir, que para los que tienen los medios para irse parece algo extraño sufrir el frio y las nieblas que en ningún caso puede mejorar la salud. 14. Hay muchos lugares que tienen un hermoso clima durante los meses de noviembre, diciembre, enero, febrero, marzo, abril y mayo. ¿ Qué lugares son ? 15. La Habana la capital de Cuba disfruta de un clima ideal durante esos meses. Por ahora preferiría algún lugar más cerca de Londres. 16. Pués, ¿ por qué no ir a las Islas Canarias un viajecito por mar? No me gusta el mar porque me mareo. Pues cruce a Calais, vaya a Paris, entonces tome el expreso para Madrid y de allí vaya a Sevilla. 17. ¿ Por qué no quedar en Madrid? Porque hace demaisiado frio en el invierno. Pues entonces, creo que iré a Sevilla. Supongo que es muy barato vivir en España. 18. Todo depende de como se vive. Si se vive en España en los mejores hoteles como Vd. vive aquí, creo que Vd. lo hallará tan caro como en Londres. 19. Si quiere Vd. comida inglesa en España Vd. hallará que saldrá justamente tan caro como si desease comida española en Londres. 20. Creo que es lo mismo en todas partes. ¿ Cómo es entonces que algunas personas dicen que se puede vivir muy barato en algunos paises? 21. Hallo generalmente que es porque no viven en el extranjero en el estilo en que viven en su pais natal. En tales casos la comparación es de ningún valor. 22. Pero un amigo mio me dijo que ahorró mucho dinero viviendo en el extranjero. Oh, si, yo estuve hablando a su amigo sobre eso anoche. Su modo es muy fácil comprender. En Inglaterra vive con mucho lujo, y en el extranjero vive sin nungún lujo.

EJERCICIO XXXI.

(The Adverbs: pp. 100-103.)

1. Veo que muchos adverbios se forman añadiendo la terminación mente al adjetivo pero suponiendo que haya varios adverbios ¿añadiria Vd. la terminación mente a cada uno? 2. En ese caso sólamente se añade al último, pero los otros quedan en feminino; por ejemplo; Su padre escribe clara, concisa y elegantemente. 3. El juez habló sabia y elocuentemente. Si, le oí ¿ Quién cree Vd. que escriba mejor, él o su hermano? 4. El escribe facilmente, su hermano mayor escribe más facilmente, y su hermano menor el abogado escribe menos facilmente. 5. ¿ Pinta el artista tan facilmente como su padre? No, señorita, su padre es muy famoso y pinta muy facilmente. 6. ¿ Hay algunos adverbios que admiten aumentación o diminución? Si, cerca, cerquita; derecho, derechito. 7. Estos autores no escriben mucho, pero escriben bien. Estoy de acuerdo, he leido algunas de sus obras. 8. ¿ Ha visto Vd. a su socio hoy? No, no le he visto hoy, ni ayer, ni anteayer. 9. ¿ Hay alguna diferencia entre aquí y acá? Veo que en el vocabulario ambas palabras están traducidas como here? 10. Aquí significa en un cierto lugar determinado, mientras que acá significa acá en un sentido general, por ejemplo: aquí estoy. 11. La diferencia entre aŭi y allá es que alli significa en cierto lugar, mientras que allá significa allá en sentido general. 12. ¿ Cuál es la mejor traducción por where, donde o adonde? Pues, donde

significa at what place, por ejemplo: ; donde está su casa? y adonde significa to where (o whither), por ejemplo: ¿ Adonde va Vd. ? 13. ¿ Adonde va Vd. mañana ? Vov a la orilla del mar para ver donde mi amigo ha edificado su casa. 14. ¿ Hace buen tiempo ahora a la orilla del mar? Si, en la costa del sur, y quiero arrovecharme del buen tiempo mientras que dure. 15. ¿ Ha recibido Vd. un radiograma (Marconigrama) de su hija? Si, señorita, lo recibí temprano esta mañana. 16. ¿ Habló Vd. a su amigo en Madrid ayer? Si le hablé por el teléfono sin hilos y pude reconocer su voz, maravilloso, ; no es verdad? ¡Ya lo creo! 17. ¿Se usan mucho los cables en estos dias (hoy dia)? Menos cada dia debido al gran avance de la telegrafía sin hilos. 18. ¿ De qué modo le gusta a Vd. viajar. por tierra, mar o aire? Por aire, y debido a las mejoras en los buques de aire no creo que haya mucho peligro. 19. Lo que vo consideraría un viaje ideal es un viaje alrededor del mundo en un buque de aire, y tengo la intención de ver si puedo arreglar esto para el mes que viene. 20. ¿Cuesta mucho? Me dicen que el precio ha sido reducido. Mi hijo le gustó mucho su viaje por buque de aire de Madrid a Sevilla. 21. Dicen que la aviación está muy avanzada en España. En los últimos años es casí un deporte: 22. ¡ Como se ha transformado el mundo! ¡ Qué poco soñaron nuestros abuelos de estos tremendos cambios!

EJERCICIO XXXII.

(The Prepositions: pp. 104-106.)

I. ¿Por qué se dan tantos ejemplos del uso de las preposiciones para y por y ningún ejemplo de las otras? 2. Porque todos los que aprenden el español tienen dificultad en saber donde emplear para y por y no tienen ninguna dificultad en usar las otras preposiciones. 3. Vd. no puede equivocarse en el uso de at, in, y to. Se lo probaré. "A las ocho voy al teatro." "Ella se viste a la española." 4. Ante todo, mire al termómetro. Está bajo cero. Con este frio no puedo hacer nada. Pues sería contra la naturaleza si no hiciese frio desde ahora hasta Marzo. 5. Desde que vine de España he sentido el frio. ¿En que parte de España ha vivido Vd.? Viví en Cadiz por cinco años. Pues yo vivía en un pueblo entre Sevilla y

Madr'd, y cada vez que fui hacía Sevilla sentía el calor. 6. ¿ Por qué fué Vd. allí en el calor ? Fuí a ver a mi tia, porque según mi costumbre paso algunas semanas con mis parientes en la primavera. 7. Sin duda irá Vd. este año, ¿ no es verdad? Si, pero ante todo quiero visitar Asturias, ¿quiere Vd. venir conmigo? 8. Me gustaria ir pero Vd. ve que ocupado estoy. Trataré de ir, pero esta semana sería imposible, en una quincena ; quién sabe? o. Muy bien, también será más conveniente para mi, pues entonces, en una quincena iremos a España, partiremos por el vapor que sale a principios del mes que viene. 10. Consorme. Estaré listo, pues no llevaré mucho equipaje. Solamente (sólo) un baul y un saco. ¿ Cuantos baules llevará Vd.? Uno pequeño. II ¿ Es necesario llevar un sobretodo (gaban)? Llevaré uno muy ligero y dos casacas, una levita, tres chalecos, media docena de camisas, cuatro pantalones, tres calzoncillos, media docena de pares de calcetines, unas corbatas, una docena de cuellos y pañuelos. 12. ¿ Cree Vd. que podrá poner todas esas cosas en un baul? Yo creo que necesitará dos. No, mi baul es algo grande. ; Y qué lleva Vd.? 13. Muy poco. Ouiero comprar las cosas que necesito en España; Vd. ve hay una doble ventaja en esto; la práctica de hablar español, y la diversión de comprar. Será un agradable pasatiempo. 14. ¿ Qué esta estudiando su hijo? Estudia para abogado, y temo que se requiere mucha influencia, pero quién sabe, tal vez (quiza) tendrá buen exito. 15. ¿ Cuántos libros hay en esta biblióteca? Hay aquí más de cinco mil libros. ¿ Y cuantos acree Vd. que interesen al público en general? Diremos unos cien. 16. ¿Cómo traduciría Vd. las siguientes sentencias, usando las propias preposiciones? Tras el invierno, la primavera. Casarse por poderes. Vender por mayor o por menor. Vender por docenas. 17. Trabaja sin cesar. Según lo que dicen (según se dice) ha hecho una fortuna, pero ha trabajado mu ho. 18. Ha públicado s 1 padre su libro? Si, ha tenido gran exito y merece todo lo que pueda ganar, pues ha hecho lo rosible para hacerlo interesante. 19. ; De que trata el libro? Sus viajes en Centro y Sud América, y hace dos años publicó sus viajes en España. Con este libro también tuvo muy buen exito. 20. España es uno de los pocos paises que pueden vivir con sus solos productos, tiene todo que puede necesitar en alimentos, frutas y minerales de todas clases, agua saludable, gran número de rios y buen clima. 21. En el siglo diez y seis (dieciseis). España fué la más grande nación fabricadora. Se hallaban fabricantes españoles en todas partes del mundo. Hay aun muchos talleres y fábricas por toda la Península. 22. Es curioso que las otras naciones no han producido aun, bordados, telas de seda, tisúes y tejidos de oro y plata de tan exquisita perfección. permanencia y hermesura como los que se fabrican en España.

EJERCICIO XXXIII.

(The Conjunctions: pp. 108-113.)

I. Su amigo, aunque comparativemente pobre, es no obstante (sin embargo) más feliz que Vd. ¿Como explica Vd. esto? (Cómo lo explica V.?) 2. Pues, él es filósofo y yo no lo soy, además él es optimista y yo soy pesimista. 3. Desearía escribir una carta antes de salir, asabe Vd. si hay tiempo antes que sale el tren? 4. Hay justamente media hora, así que, si Vd. pueda escribir la carta en veinte minutos quedarán diez minutos, y estaremos en tiempo. 5. ¡Oh! puedo hacer eso con facilidad. ¿Tiene Vd. sellos? (estampillas). Aquí están. ¿ Tiene Vd. un sobre más grande? En esa gaveta (cajón) a la derecha Vd. hallará todos los tamaños. 6. Las plumas, tinta v papel de escribir (papel para cartas) están a su izquierda y aquí está el papel secante. 7. ¿Está Vd. muy ocupado? Si estoy estableciendo una sucursal de mi casa en Madrid; mi negocio con España ha aumentado enormemente durante los últimos dos años. 8. ¿ Cuales clases de mercaderias (mercancias) inglesas se venden mejor en España? Tomaría demasiado tiempo decirle todas, pero mencionaré algunas. 9. Maquinaria, herramientas, lápices, articulos de escritorio, cuchillos, tenedores y cucharas, cemento, botones, tinta, colores, pinturas y barnices. 10. ¿ Hay venta por otros artículos, además de los que Vd. ha mencionado? Si, por ejemplo:-té, almidón, productos químicos, artículos de loza, cartón, artículos para fotografia, bicicletas, etc. 11. No tenía idea que se podía hallar venta por tantos artículos; me aconseja Vd. a abrir una casa también ? Si, creo que Vd. haría muy buen negocio. 12. Para que tenga buen exito

es necesario saber español, de otro modo, no creo que valdría la pena. 13. Vd. tiene razón, y a fin de que lo sepa bien, estudio cada dia una hora y si tengo tiempo dos o tres horas. 14. ¿ Cuándo cree Vd. que sería mejor abrir? Eso depende de su conocimiento de la lengua. 15. ¿ Qué es la diferencia entre las palabras viajero y viajante? Viajero significa uno que viaja por placer o para escribir sus experiencias, y viajante significa uno que viaja en busca de personas que compren de él. 16. Pues, ¿ comprende Vd. el uso de las conjunciones? Si, muy bien, son fáciles. 17. ¿ Hay muchos proverbios en español? Creo que hay más proverbios en español que en cualquiera otra lengua. 18. ¿Donde puedo hallar los proverbios españoles? Se han publicado varíos libros de proverbios, y si leyese Vd. el Don Quijote hallará muchos. 19. Sabe Vd. que son las nueve? Conque no podemos ir al teatro, pues no importa iremos mañana por la tarde. 20. Es muy necesario que Vd. lea en alta voz, para que se acostumbre a la pronunciación.

EJERCICIO XXXIV.

(The Interjections: pp. 114-115.)

I. ¿ Hay otras interjecciones? Muchisimas más, pero no es necesario aprenderlas todas. 2. ¡ Mire lo que está haciendo! La maceta se ha caido y se ha roto. ¡Qué lástima! No se ha roto, es muy fuerte. 3. ¡ Cuidado con la cabeza! esa puerta no es muy alta. Antes de salir digame, pues me gustaría mostrarle un artículo en el diario de hoy. 4. ¡Huy! que dolor de muelas! ¡Qué! Vd. sufre de dolor de muelas y dolor de cabeza. Lo siento mucho. ¡Gracias a Dios! nunca he tenido el uno ni el otro. 5. ¡Ah! que alegría! ¡He ganado en la loteria! ¿ Cuánto ganó Vd.? ¡ Cien duros (pesos)! Pues, no es mucho. Es mejor que nada. 6. Poco a poco he aprendido de memoria mil palabras en español. ¡Es posible! Si, y he estudiado una hora cada dia por tres meses. 7. Pues, ; entonces sabe Vd. la lengua (el idioma)? Hablo, leo v l'escribo bastante bien, pero tengo una pequeña dificultad. 8. ¿Cómo es eso? Hallo dificultad en leer las novelas españolas, porque muchos autores emplean palabras raras. 9. ¿Esta Vd. seguro que son palabras raras? Pues, tal vez no debiera decir palabras raras. Vd. ve mi vocabulario inglés es tan limitado; no tomo ningún interes en la vida campestre, ni en flores, pajaros o peces, ni en alimentos ni frutas. 10. ¡ Mi querido amigo! Me parece que sus intereses son algo limitados. ¡Oh, no! Vd. está enteramente equivocado, he encontrado muchos hombres en la ciudad que no toman ningún interes en tales cosas. II. Pues bien, ¿que le interesa a Vd.? La Bolsa, los mercados, la finanza en general, y por placer (or diversión) el teatro y los viajes. 12. Cuando digo que me gusta viajar, quiero decir que me gusta ver otros paises y ciudades, no la vida campestre, sino siempre la vida de las ciudades. Vd. ve ahora que mi mundo es pequeño. 13. Ahora comprendo su dificultad, y por supuesto no sería fácil hallar muchas obras tan limitadas. ¿Vd. dice que sabe mil palabras en español? 14. Si, y las sé perfectamente, y es curioso que estoy seguro que las palabras que uso en inglés no llegan a mil. 15. ¿ Por qué se rie Vd.? No sabe Vd. que la mayoría de los hombres tienen un vocabulario aun más pequeño que el mio, y que se interesan aun en menos que vo? 16. Vd. tiene razón, pero yo me rio, porque no puedo comprender que un hombre tan lleno de ambición, como Vd. parece, tome tan poco interes en el mundo. 17. Lo siento mucho, pero no puedo ver las cosas como Vd. las ve ; el hecho es que yo conozco centenares de hombres que no toman ningún interes en nada, salvo su trabajo en la ciudad y en dormir, y cuando todo va bien (marcha bien) en la ciudad, y duermen bien, se consideran que estan en un cielo terrestre. 18. Veo ahora que hay felicidad en el mundo y que algunos hombres requieren más que otros, y según su opinión lo menos que uno necesita tanto más seliz será. Es verdaderamente hermoso. 19. Anoche algunos amigos comieron conmigo; el esposo es corredor, todo lo que desea en este mundo es buena suerte en la bolsa y dormir bien, su señora (esposa) dijo a mi señora que todo lo que quiere en este mundo es visitar las tiendas y dormir bien; los dos (ambos) son tan selices como pueden ser. 20. Sabe Vd. que mi conversación con Vd. me ha hecho beneficio? ¿ Por qué? Porque nunca sabía (supe) que hay tanta felicidad en este mundo. Pues amigo! Me alegro que he hecho beneficio a alguien.

EJERCICIO XXXV.

(Construction: pp. 117-122.)

I. Ahora estamos en el último ejercicio de la gramática, ¿ hay algo que desea Vd. preguntar? 2. Me gustaría saber la diferencia entre "todavía" y "aún"; parece que ambas palabras significan yet. Vd. tiene razón. 3. No se olvide que never se traduce por "nunca" o jamás," por ejémplo: "Nunca, jamás lo escribiré," emplee "nunca" para traducir el primer never, y "jamás" por el segundo. 4. Comprendo que cuando se emplean ambas palabras "nunca" tiene que venir primera. En e ta carta que acabo de recibir la palabra "jamás" se emplea como ever. 5. Si, eso esta bien, y la traducción es, Ha visto Vd. jamás esa opera? ¿ Es todo (Es eso todo) lo que Vd. desea preguntar? 6. Pues, en ésta carta mi amigo dice: "En Madrid, ha sido hoy el calor verdaderamente excesivo, a causa de la falta de aire, pero hay esperanza de que venga una nube de verano a refrescar la atmósfera con algunos beneficos chaparrones." 7. Y dice aquí, "La temperatura máxima se ha elevado a 33°." No puedo comprender lo que significa quejandose del calor cuando dice que estaba a 33°. 8. Pues, Vd. está pensando del termómetro Fahrenheit y nosotros usamos el termometro Centígrado. 9. Ahora veo, pero como puedo saber; qué significa 33°? Yo siempre creía que todo el mundo usaba el Fahrenheit y que el termómetro Centígrado era sólo una curiosidad. 10. Pero Vd. estaba muy equivocado. el hecho es que la mayor parte del mundo usa el Centígrado. En éste termómetro el punto de congelación esta al cero, y el punto de ebulición a 100°. 11. Para convertir Centígrado en Fahrenheit, multiplícase por 9, divídase por 5, v añadase 32. Si hace Vd. esto con los 33° grados del termómetro Centígrado hallará que no es sorprendente que su amigo siente el calor en Madrid. 12. He hecho el cálculo, y hallo que llegaría a unos que Fahrenheit, y eso en el mes de Julio, ¿ qué será en Agosto? ¿ Quien sabe? 13. En el termómetro Fahrenheit el punto de congelación es 32° y el punto de ebullición 212°. Para convertir Fahrenheit a Centígrado dedújase 32°, multiplícase por 5, y dividase por 9. 14. Ahora que lo comprendo, prefiero el Centígrado; parece más razonable. Yo también lo prefiero. 15. ¿ Quiere Vd. tener la bondad de decirme

en qué paises se habla español? Aquí en Europa es la lengua de España y sus colonias, y en Africa se habla en las posesiones españolas. 16. También es la lengua de dieciocho repúblicas en América. 17. ¿Qué es la extensión de esos paises? La República Argentina es la más grande; tiene una superficie de 1,139,979 millas cuadradas (2,952,545 kilómetros cuadrados), Mejico 761,097 millas cuadradas, Bolivia 708,195, Peru 679,000, y las otras repúblicas son todas grandes comparadas con las naciones de Europa. 18. ¿ Qué es la extensión total de todas estas naciones en que se habla español? Más de 5,048,500 millas cuadradas (13,077,620 kilómetros cuadrados), y el número total de habitantes es más de 52,000,000. Esto no incluye la madre patria, España, y sus colonias y posesiones, con unos 25,000,000 de habitantes. 19. ¿Cuánta gente hay en el mundo que habla español? 20. Hay aproximadamente 100,000,000 (cien millones). 21. Ahora puedo ver que el Imperio Español era enorme. ¿ Puede Vd. decirme cuanto tiempo duró? Más de trescientos años. 22. Los grandes conquistadores españoles fueron inspirados por tres motivos, predicar el Evangelio, obtener gloria, v hallar oro.

TO THE STUDENT.

The names of a number of works which will be of great assistance in further pursuing the study of Spanish will be found on the second page of the cover of this volume, or in the Catalogue bound up with it.

If a knowledge of Commercial Spanish is desired, Marlborough's *Spanish and English Commercial Correspondence* will be found useful. (See Catalogue, or page 3 of cover.